



3 1761 04116 4773





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation





A.C. Hamilton,
University College.

10/3/88.

T
—

53



S. Gr
M 2837p

A
PRACTICAL
SPANISH GRAMMAR

WITH
EXERCISES AND THEMES

BY
EUGENE W. MANNING, PH.D.
PROFESSOR OF MODERN LANGUAGES AND LITERATURES IN DE PAUW
UNIVERSITY



167549
2111121

NEW YORK
HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

F. W. CHRISTERN
Boston: CARL SCHOENHOF
TORONTO, CAN.
VANNEVAR & CO.
488 YONGE STREET.

COPYRIGHT, 1891,
BY
HENRY HOLT & CO.

ROBERT DRUMMOND,
ELECTROTYPYER AND PRINTER,
NEW YORK.

PREFACE.

THE following pages, written at first for my classes in Cornell University, are now handed over to the public in the hope that they may be of some help in introducing others, as well as college students, to the Spanish language and literature. My aim has been to write a practical grammar and, so far as college students are concerned, one that may be tolerably well mastered (leaving time for reading about 150 ordinary duodecimo pages of Spanish in one college year), provided two recitations per week are devoted to it.

My own custom has been to have the students learn the advance lesson only so thoroughly as to be able to write out the theme ; to have them put the theme on the board ; to correct it myself, having the students correct their themes as I indicate mistakes and state reasons for changes, and on the review (next time we meet) to give (without book or theme) the Spanish for the English (as well as the English for the Spanish) on my reading the sentences aloud. A part at least of the Spanish reading lessons was also translated on review (as above) from hearing me read the Spanish. This method seemed to work admirably at Cornell ; but is given here simply for such teachers as may not have a definite and possibly better method of their own.

Since Spanish is rarely taken up until after some

other language than the mother-tongue has been studied, much has been left out that otherwise would have found its way into the book. The statements about the pronunciation of Spanish are the results of some months' careful listening to the best Spanish orators in the Ateneo at Madrid. In the vocabulary the order of the English alphabet has been followed, since that is of course much more familiar to English-speaking persons. No great effort has been made after the first half-dozen themes to have the sentences easy, and so the vocabularies are long. It will be found, however, that only about one half the words are used in the themes (masculine nouns coming first in the lesson vocabularies, then feminine nouns, then other words). The reading of easy Spanish may be begun with profit after the first conjugation (12th lesson) has been mastered.

It will be noted that the arrangement of the Spanish verb is an entirely new one, which it is believed will greatly facilitate the mastering of the verb. A short chapter on the history of Spanish, especially in its relation to Latin, will be found just before the general vocabularies. A list of all irregular verbs in the Spanish, for which I am indebted chiefly to Knapp's Spanish Grammar, will be found on pp. 113-127, and a general index at the end of the book. While acknowledging my indebtedness to the Spanish Academy Grammar, to Wigger's "Grammatik der Spanischen Sprache" (to this latter especially for the treatise on the subjunctive mood), and to others, no one has been so closely followed as to make its author responsible for what is here, though I have taken from many sources whatever suited my purpose.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION,	1
Alphabet, §1. Gender of Letters, 2. Capital Letters, 3. Remarks on Letters, 4. Sound of Vowels, 5. Quality of Vowels, 6. Diphthongs, 7. Triphthongs, 8. Consonants, 9-32. Double Consonants, 33. Tonic Accent, 34-36. Graphic Accent, 37. Division of Syllables, 38. Punctuation, 39.	
 LESSONS WITH EXERCISES AND THEMES.	
I. GENDER, ARTICLE, etc.: Present of <i>ser</i> ,	7
II. NOUNS—GENDER, NUMBER, CASE, etc.: Imperfect of <i>ser</i> ,	10
III. NOUNS WITH ARTICLE, and as Diminutive and Augmentative, and Present Tense of <i>tener</i> ,	14
IV. ADJECTIVES: Present Tense of <i>estar</i> ,	18
V. ADJECTIVES (Comparison of): <i>ser</i> and <i>estar</i> distinguished,	21
VI. NUMERALS: Present of <i>haber</i> ,	25
VII. CONJUNCTIVE AND DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS, and Present Tense of <i>amar</i> ,	30
VIII. CONJUNCTIVE AND DISJUNCTIVE POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS: Present Tense of <i>comer</i> ,	36
IX. DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES AND DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS: Present Tense of <i>recibir</i> ,	40
X. RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS: Imperfect of <i>amar</i> ,	44
XI. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS: Preterite of <i>amar</i> ,	49
XII. VERB-FORMS: <i>hablar</i> (First Conjugation),	54
XIII. SECOND AND THIRD CONJUGATION: <i>temer</i> , <i>recibir</i> ,	60
XIV. EUPHONIC CHANGES IN REGULAR VERBS: <i>tocar</i> , etc.,	64

	PAGE
XV. COMPOUND TENSES and <i>haber, to have,</i>	68
XVI. PASSIVE VOICE : <i>ser</i> and <i>estar,</i>	72
XVII. REFLEXIVE VERBS and <i>tener,</i>	77
XVIII. IRREGULAR VERBS : <i>acertar</i> and others—First Conjugation,	81
XIX. IRREGULAR VERBS : <i>atender</i> and others—Second Conjugation,	87
XX. IRREGULAR VERBS—Second Conjugation (con- cluded) : DEFECTIVE VERBS,	93
XXI. IRREGULAR VERBS : <i>sentir</i> and others—Third Conjugation,	99
XXII. IRREGULAR VERBS : Third Conjugation (con- cluded)—DEFECTIVE VERBS,	103
XXIII. IMPERSONAL VERBS : Verbs used negatively and interrogatively,	109
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS AND PRINCIPAL DEFEC- TIVE VERBS,	113
XXIV. USE OF THE TENSES : Simple Tenses,	128
XXV. SIMPLE TENSES (concluded) : COMPOUND TENSES,	132
XXVI. THE IMPERATIVE MOOD : CONDITIONAL MOOD,	136
XXVII. THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD in Independent and Dependent Sentences,	140
XXVIII. THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD in Dependent Sen- tences (concluded) : Sequence of Tenses,	144
XXIX. THE INFINITIVE MOOD,	148
XXX. THE INFINITIVE MOOD (concluded),	152
XXXI. PRESENT PARTICIPLE : PAST PARTICIPLE,	156
XXXII. ADVERBS,	160
XXXIII. PREPOSITIONS,	164
XXXIV. PREPOSITIONS (concluded),	169
XXXV. CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS,	175
SKETCH OF THE HISTORY OF THE SPANISH LANGUAGE, especially in its Relation with Latin,	179
SPANISH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY,	195
VOCABULARY OF SPANISH PROPER NAMES,	219
ENGLISH-SPANISH VOCABULARY,	221
GENERAL INDEX,	237

PRACTICAL SPANISH GRAMMAR.

1. ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION.

Letters.	Names.	Pronounced.
A a	a	ä in <i>ah</i>
B b	be	bā in <i>bane</i>
C c	ce	thā in <i>thane</i>
Ch ch	che	chā in <i>change</i>
D d	de	dā in <i>date</i>
E e	e	ā in <i>ate</i>
F f	efe	ā'fay ²
G g	ge	'h'ā in <i>hate</i>
H h	hache	ä'tchay ²
I i	i	ee in <i>eel</i>
J j	jota	'h'ō'tä
K ¹ k ¹	ke	kay ²
L l	ele	ā'lay ²
LL ll	elle	ā'ly ³ ay ²
M m	eme	ā'may ²
N n	ene	ā'nay ²
Ñ ñ	eñe	ā'ny ⁵ ay ²
O o	o	ō
P p	pe	pa in <i>pane</i>
Q q	cu	coo in <i>coon</i>
R r	ere	ā'ray ²
RR rr	erre	ār'ray ²
S s	ese	ā'say ²
T t	te	ta in <i>tame</i>
U u	u	oo in <i>ooze</i>
V v	ve	va in <i>vane</i>
W ⁴ w ⁴	doble u	dō'blay ² oo
X x	equis	ā'keece
Y y	i griega	ee greeā'gä
Z z	zeta	thā'tä

¹ Strongly and deeply aspirated. ² ay having the sound of *ey* in *they*. ³ Like *li* in *William*. ⁴ Used only in borrowed words, as *kilometre*. ⁵ ny here like *ni* in *union*. ⁶ Used only in foreign words, as *Washington*, and pronounced as *oo* in *ooze*.

2. All letters are of the feminine gender: *as, una a, una b*, etc.

3. Capital letters are used in general as in English. The names of the months and days of the week, also adjectives formed from names of nations, provinces, towns, and men and *yo (= I)*, begin with small letters.

4. (a) The vowel sounds (which occur oftener than in English) are full and distinct. (b) The consonants are rather touched upon than distinctly pronounced. (c) The only new sound (not found in English) is that of *g* before *e* or *i*, and of *j* (always like Spanish *g* before *e* or *i*). (d) *H* (except in *ch* [see 11] and in initial *hie*¹ and *hue*) is silent. (e) *U*, except when it has the diæresis² (*ü*), is silent between *g* and *e* or *i*, and always after *q*.

5. **A** like *a* in *ah* or in *far*: *arma, casa.*
E “ *a* in *ate*: *edad, doble.*
I “ *ee* in *eel*: *indicar, inútil.*
O “ *o* in *go*: *obra, modo.*
U³ “ *oo* in *ooze*: *lugar, unos.*
Y⁴ as vowel like Spanish *i*: *voy, doy, soy.*

6. The quality of the vowels remains the same, though they are short in unaccented and (generally) long in accented syllables.

7. DIPHTHONGS.⁵—Each of the five vowels (*a, e, i, o, u*) may be doubled (without forming a diphthong), or

¹ Very lightly touched even here. Many say it is silent.

² Always used to break up a diphthong.

³ See § 4 (e). ⁴ *Y* is a vowel when alone, as in *y (and)*, and at the end of a word or syllable; elsewhere a consonant.

⁵ In diphthongs and triphthongs each vowel is slightly

be followed¹ by and may form a diphthong with each² of the other four vowels. If one of the vowels of these combinations is accented, they generally do not form a diphthong; if neither is accented, they generally form a diphthong. (See § 8 (b).)

8. (a) TRIPHTHONGS.—These are *iai*, as in *preciais*; *iei*, as in *precieis*; *uai* (or *uay*), as in *santiguais*, *guay*; *uei* (or *uey*), as in *bueitre* (*buitre*), *buey*.

(b) Note that the triphthongs (and diphthongs) have each vowel sounded and with its usual sound, only each vowel unites more or less intimately with the other vowel(s).

9. CONSONANTS.—**B** as in English before *l* and *r*; elsewhere not so distinctly (with lips scarcely touching), and by some, though incorrectly, almost like *v*.

10. **C** like **k** before *a*, *o*, *u*, or a consonant (except *h*), and sounds like *th* (as in *thin*) before *e* or *i*. **Cc** used only before *i* and like *k'th*: as, *accion*.

11. **Ch** like *ch* in *much* (*mucho*).

12. **D** as in English, except with lighter pressure of the tongue; before *r* or final very slightly sounded, or almost like *th* in *then*.

13. **F** like English *f*.

14. **G**³, before *a*, *o*, *u*, or another consonant, as in English *go*. Before *e* or *i* is nearly like *h* in *hate*, deeply and fully aspirated (or better, *ch* in German *Tuch*, deep and full). **Gn** as in *signal*.

sounded, and except in the combinations *io*, *oi*, and sometimes *eo*, it is the vowel first in alphabetical order that generally receives the tonic, if not the graphic, accent.

¹ **Y** takes the place of final *i*, except when *i* is accented: as, *jabalí*.

² **H** between vowels has no effect on the pronunciation.

³ See § 4 (e).

15. **H**: see § 4 (*d*) and page 3, note 2.
16. **J** always like **g** before **e** or **i**. (See § 14.)
17. **K** like *k* in *kind*.
18. **L** as in English.
19. **Ll** like *lli* in *William*.
20. **M** as in English; never doubled, **m** or **nm** used instead and rarely final.
21. **N** as in English; when doubled, both sounded.
22. **Ñ**¹ as *ni* in *union*.
23. **P** as in English (initial only before **l** or **r** or a vowel).
24. **Q** always followed by **u**, and sounds like **k** (**u** being silent).
25. **R** is strongly rolled at the beginning of a word or syllable, or after **l**, **n**, **s**, and whenever doubled.
26. **S** always hard, as in English *sand*.
27. **T** always (even before **i**) like *t* in *tin*.
28. **V**² as in English, except that the upper teeth and lower lip scarcely touch.
29. **W** as in English (when used at all).
30. **X** now always like *ks*: as, *x* in *wax*.
31. **Y** as consonant (i.e., at beginning of word or followed by a vowel in same syllable) is pronounced as in English.
32. **Z** always like **c** before **e** or **i** (that is, as *th* in *thin*).
33. Spanish avoids assimilation of consonants (using *inmortal* [Eng. *immortal*!]), and generally simplifies double consonants (as *dificil* [Eng. *difficult*]). Except **n** and **l**, only **c** and **r** are capable of being doubled: as, *ella*, *ennoblecer*, *accion*, *error*. (Double

¹ For description of this sign see § 37.

² Found only before vowels.

l [= ll] and double r [= rr] are phonetically independent letters.)

34. TONIC ACCENT.—(a) Words ending in a consonant¹ (including infinitives, imperatives [2d plu.], and the second person plural of verbs), except plurals in *s* or *es*, and verb-forms in *s*, *es*, *mos*, *an*, *en*, and *on*, are accented on the final syllable, unless otherwise marked. (b) Proper names in *ez*, and some in *es*, are accented on the next to the last syllable: as, **Lopez, Cervantes**.

35. Words ending in a vowel or diphthong (counted as one syllable²), and plurals in *s* or *es*, and verb-forms in *s*, *es*, *mos*, *an*, *en*, and *on*, are accented on the next³ to the last syllable, unless otherwise marked.

36. Plurals keep the accent of the singular (except *carácter* and *régimen*, *caractéres* and *regímenes*); and compounds, the accent (not always marked) of the separate parts: as, **mondadientes = mónda-diéntes**.

37. GRAPHIC ACCENT.—(a) The acute accent (´) is used⁴ to distinguish a word-form used in one sense from the same form used in another sense: as, *el* = *the*, *él* = *he*; *se* = *self*, *sé* = *I know*; etc.: and to indicate irregularly accented syllables and interrogative words, etc. (b) The tilde (~) is used over *n* when the vowel

¹ Or in a diphthong with *y* as the last letter.

² Providing the word has a syllable preceding the diphthong, which, to fall under the rule, must be *i* plus a vowel or *u* plus a vowel; but *tio* is pronounced *ti'-o*, and *aldea* = *al-de'-a*, etc. Many verbs-forms in *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *ua*, *ue*, *uo* sometimes graphically accent the *i* or *u*.

³ The rules of the Spanish Academy for the accent differ somewhat from the above; but the Academy rules have not, up to the present, been generally followed by publishers.

⁴ Even over capital letters.

sound following **n** is to be preceded by the sound of initial **y**: hence **año** = **anyo**. (c) The diæresis (¨) is placed over the vowel **u** in the syllables **güe**, **güi** to denote that the **u** must be pronounced; and in poetry it also breaks up diphthongs: as, **rüido**, **viaje**. (d) Other graphic signs (except as elsewhere referred to) as in English.

38. DIVISION OF SYLLABLES.—(a) One consonant, including **ch**, **ll**, **ñ** (**rr**¹), belongs to the following vowel: as, **ca-lle**, **ha-cer**, **ha-llar**, **sue-ño**. (b) Two consonants, if they are such as may begin a Spanish word (**b**, **c**, **f**, **g**, and **p** followed by **l** or **r**, and **d** or **t** followed by **r**), go with the following vowel: as, **ha-blár**, **con-cluir**, etc. (c) In other cases the first (or the first plus **s**) of several consonants goes with the preceding vowel (even **x** is divided into **c-s**): as, **con-mover**, **ins-pi-rar**, **mac-simo** (**maximo**). (d) Unaccented diphthongs are generally not divided: as, **a-gua**, **bue-no**, etc.; but **continú-a**, **continú-e**, etc. (e) Compound words are divided between the different parts: as, **pro-nom-bre**; but in many words little attention is paid to the original Latin division: as, **su-bir**, **des-cripcion**, etc., instead of **sub-ir**, **de-scripcion**, etc.

39. (a) Owing to the difficulty in distinguishing the interrogative or exclamatory sentence by its form, the sign of interrogation² or exclamation² (only inverted) is usually placed before it: as, **¿Qué me quieres?**² **¡Cómo llueve!**² (b) Other punctuation in Spanish is about the same as in English.

¹ Authorities differ as to **rr**, but the dictionaries consulted generally divide: as, **per-ro**.

² The inverted sign is generally omitted at the beginning with short sentences.

LESSON I.

GENDER, ARTICLES, ETC.

40. CASES.—There are two cases¹ (nominative and objective), as in English.

41. GENDER.—There are three genders, masculine, feminine, and neuter, though the neuter² is very seldom used.

42. NUMBER.—There are two numbers, singular and plural; and the sign of the plural is *s* or *es*, as in English.

43. DEFINITE ARTICLE.

<i>m.</i> el	} sing.	<i>m.</i> los	} plu.
<i>f.</i> la		<i>f.</i> las	
<i>n.</i> lo		<i>n.</i> (no plural.)	

44. INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

<i>m.</i> un	} <i>a</i> or <i>an</i>	<i>m.</i> unos ⁴	} <i>ones</i> or <i>a few</i> .	
<i>f.</i> ³ una		<i>f.</i> unas ⁴		} plu.
<i>n.</i> (wanting.)		<i>n.</i> (wanting.)		

¹ The Spanish Academy Grammar gives six cases, as follows:

	Masculine.	Feminine.
<i>Nom.</i>	el lobo, <i>the wolf</i> .	la carta, <i>the letter</i> .
<i>Gen.</i> (de el)	del lobo, <i>of the wolf</i> . [<i>to the wolf</i> .]	de la carta, <i>of the letter</i> .
<i>Dat.</i> (á el)	al or para el lobo,	á or para la carta, <i>to the let-</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	el lobo, <i>the wolf</i> .	la carta, <i>the letter</i> . [<i>ter</i> .]
<i>Voc.</i>	lobo, <i>wolf</i> .	carta, <i>letter</i> .
<i>Abl.</i>	con el lobo, <i>with the wolf</i> .	con la carta, <i>with the letter</i> .

² Used chiefly with adjectives, pronouns, and possessives: *as, the good, lo bueno; (the) mine, lo mio*.

³ See §§ 61 and 46.

⁴ Really indefinite adjectives; at times indefinite pronouns or even nouns.

45. **De el** (*of the*) are contracted to **del**, and **á el** (*to the*) to **al**.

46. **El** is used for euphony before feminine nouns of two syllables¹ (not adjectives) beginning with an accented **a** or **ha**: as, **el ala**, **el ave**; also **del ala**, **la ave**: but plural regular: **las alas**, **las aves**, **de las alas**, **á las aves**, etc. **Un** is used for **una**, just as **el** for **la**; though this usage is not to be commended.

47. INFLECTION OF PRESENT TENSE OF **ser**, *to be*.

yo soy, *I am*.

(**tú eres**,² *thou art*.)

Usted es,³ *you are*.

él es, *he is*.

ella es, *she is*.

nosotros somos, *we are*.

(**vosotros sois**,² *ye are*.)

Ustedes son,³ *you are*.

ellos son, *they are*.

ellas son, *they are*.

48. **Usted** and **Ustedes** are contractions for **vuestra merced** (*your honor*) and **vuestras mercedes** (*your worships*), and are still further contracted to **V**.⁴ (for singular) and **VV**.⁴ (for plural); but they represent the English *you* singular and plural: as, **V**.⁴ (**Usted**) **es mi amigo**. **VV**.⁴ (**Ustedes**) **son hermanos** (*brothers*).

49. **¿Habla V?** means, *do you speak? are you speaking? speak you?* **¿Hablabas V?** means, *did you speak? were you speaking? spoke you?* And the same is true of other verbs in the positive, interrogative, and exclamatory forms.

VOCABULARY I.

el astro, *star*.

hermano, *brother*.

hijo, *son*.

la muchacha, *girl*.

tierra, *earth*.

vida, *life*.

¹ But not longer words: as, **la ánima**, **la África**.

² Avoid the use of this form.

³ See § 48.

⁴ With verbs in third person.

el Juan, <i>John.</i>	da, <i>gives.</i>
libro, <i>book.</i>	dos, <i>two.</i>
mercader, <i>merchant.</i>	dulce, <i>sweet.</i>
metal, <i>metal.</i>	este, <i>this.</i>
muchacho, <i>boy.</i>	hermosa (f.), <i>beautiful.</i>
niño, <i>child.</i>	interesante, <i>interesting.</i>
oro, <i>gold.</i>	(lo) más atractivo, <i>most attrac-</i>
padre, <i>father.</i>	mi, <i>my.</i> [i] <i>tive.</i>
regalo, <i>gift.</i>	no, <i>not.</i>
rey, <i>king.</i>	pequeño, <i>small.</i>
sol, <i>sun.</i>	pero, <i>but.</i>
sombrero, <i>hat.</i>	pesado, <i>heavy.</i>
sueño, <i>sleep, dream.</i>	pobre, <i>poor.</i>
ave (f.), <i>bird.</i>	redonda (f.), <i>round.</i>
la carta, <i>letter.</i>	siempre, <i>always.</i>
el hacha (f.), <i>hatchet.</i>	su, <i>his.</i>
la hacienda, <i>farm (estate).</i>	tiene, <i>has.</i>
hermana, <i>sister.</i>	tres, <i>three.</i>
llave, <i>key.</i>	verdadero, <i>true.</i>
madre, <i>mother.</i>	y, <i>and.</i>
mercadera, <i>merchant's wife.</i>	

EXERCISE I.

1. El hermano y la hermana. 2. El niño tiene un libro. 3. El oro es un metal. 4. Es hijo de una mercadera. 5. Este libro es regalo de mi hermana. 6. Es Aleman.¹ 7. La vida es sueño. 8. La tierra es redonda. 9. "El sol es el rey de los astros." 10. Mi hermana tiene los libros y los libros son interesantes. 11. Las hermanas no son pobres. 12. El Alemán tiene el oro. 13. El mercader no tiene las llaves. 14. Mi hermano da un sombrero al niño y una carta á la muchacha. 15. La muchacha da la carta á la hermana del mercader. 16. El Aleman no da el hacha á mi hermano. 17. El hijo del mercader

¹ See Vocabulary 219.

da el ave al rey. 18. Lo bueno no es siempre lo más atractivo.

THEME I.

1. The father and the mother. 2. My book is small. 3. (The) gold is heavy. 4. John is my brother. 5. The merchant is not poor. 6. The German has the letter of my sister, but the child has not the keys. 7. The son of the merchant has a hatchet. 8. My father has two sons. 9. My mother has three sisters. 10. The king gives gold to his son, and the merchant gives books to his sister. 11. My mother gives the hatchet of my brother to the child. 12. (The) life is sweet. 13. The bird is beautiful. 14. The Englishman has gold; the American has a farm. 15. This father gives books to his son. 16. The true is always the good.

LESSON II.

NOUNS. GENDER¹—NUMBER—CASE².

50. GENDER.—In general, as in English, names of males are masculine, and of females are feminine: as, *el muchacho, the boy*; *la muchacha, the girl*.

¹ There are no neuter nouns in Spanish.

² Nouns do not change their form for case in Spanish, except that nouns referring to persons take *á* before them as direct object: as, *amo á mi madre, I love my mother*. The preposition is not used with numerals: as, *El marinero tiene cinco hijos*: but when partitive the preposition is used: as, *El marinero tiene á dos de los muchachos (boys) en el buque (ship)*.

51. Names of months, days, points of the compass, of most fruit-trees, rivers, and mountains, are masculine: as, **enero**, *January*; **domingo**, *Sunday*; **norte**, *north*; **castaño**, *chestnut*; **Rin**, *Rhine*; **Los Alpes**, *the Alps*.

52. Compound nouns, made up of a verb and a noun, are generally masculine; others usually take the gender of the second part: as, **besamanos** (m.), *a kissing of the hand*; **cortaplumas** (m.), *a penknife*; **contrahaz** (f.), *wrong side*.

53. (a) Except those ending in **a**, **d** (and many in **z**), most nouns, especially those in **o**, are masculine: as, **hijo**, *son*; **mes** (m.), *month*; but **mesa** (f.), *table*; **verdad** (f.), *truth*; **faz** (f.), *face*. (b) Some nouns are of either gender: as, **el mártir**, **la mártir**. (c) Some have different forms for the feminine: as, **caballo**, *horse*; **yegua**, *mare*.

54. Proper names of kingdoms, provinces, cities, etc., ending in **a** are feminine; others are generally masculine: as, **el Brasil**, **la Suiza** (*Switzerland*), **Madrid** (m.).

55. NUMBER.—Nouns ending in an unaccented vowel (except **y** or **i**: as, **rey**, **reyes**), and a few with accented final vowels (as, **pié**, **mamá**, **papá**), take **s**; all others (except proper names in **s** and **z**, and some others with final syllable unaccented and ending in **s**, which remain the same) take **es** to form the plural: as, **libro**, **libros**; **mujer** (*woman*), **mujeres**; **jabalí**, **jabalíes**, etc. (but **los Cervantes**, **los lunes** [*the Mondays*]). **Z** final becomes **c** before **es** of plural: as, **voz**, **voces**.

56. Some nouns are used only in the singular: as, **fe**, *faith*; **oro**, *gold*; some only in the plural: as, **los viveres**, *provisions*; some have different meaning in

singular and plural: *as, esposa, wife; esposas, wives, or handcuffs.* Most compounds make only last part plural: *as, ferro-carril (railway), ferro-carriles.*

IMPERFECT TENSE OF *ser*, *to be.*

era, <i>I was.</i>	éramos, <i>we were.</i>
V. era, <i>you were.</i>	VV. eran, <i>you were.</i>
era, <i>he, she, it was.</i>	eran, <i>they were.</i>

VOCABULARY II.

el Americano, <i>American.</i>	la Europa, <i>Europe.</i>
amigo, <i>friend.</i>	flor, <i>flower.</i>
amor, <i>love.</i>	madre, <i>mother.</i>
buque, <i>ship.</i>	mamá, <i>mamma.</i>
-cabello, <i>hair.</i>	- manzana, <i>apple</i>
Cervantes, <i>Cervantes.</i>	- palabra, <i>word.</i>
chino, <i>Chinese.</i>	semana, <i>week.</i>
dia, <i>day.</i>	- señora, <i>lady.</i>
domingo, <i>Sunday.</i>	Suiza, <i>Switzerland.</i>
enero, <i>January.</i>	activo, <i>active.</i>
español, <i>Spanish.</i> [States.	bien, <i>well.</i>
los Estados Unidos, <i>The United</i>	-cerca (de), <i>near.</i>
el Frances, <i>Frenchman.</i>	cinco, <i>five.</i>
guante, <i>glove.</i>	dan, <i>give.</i>
-hombre, <i>man.</i>	femenino (a), <i>feminine.</i>
inglés, <i>English.</i>	- fuerte, <i>strong.</i>
marinero, <i>sailor.</i>	grande, <i>large.</i>
ojo, <i>eye.</i>	hay, <i>there are.</i>
palacio, <i>palace.</i>	joven, <i>young.</i>
papá, <i>papa.</i>	largo, <i>long.</i>
pié, <i>foot.</i>	- moreno, <i>chestnut</i>
plural, <i>plural.</i>	negro, <i>black.</i>
primo, <i>cousin.</i>	no, <i>no.</i>
-oficial, <i>officer.</i>	pequeño, <i>small.</i>
rio, <i>river.</i>	primero, <i>first.</i>
sofá, <i>sofa.</i>	que, <i>than.</i>
tribu, <i>tribe.</i>	tambien, <i>also.</i>
valor, <i>courage.</i>	tienen, <i>have.</i>
Wostenholm, <i>Wostenholm.</i>	no, <i>no.</i>

EXERCISE II.

1. Los muchachos son los hermanos de la muchacha. 2. Enero es el primer¹ mes del año. 3. Domingo es el primer día de la semana. 4. Los hombres del norte son activos. 5. El Rin es un río grande. 6. Las palabras mesa, verdad y faz, son femeninas. 7. Los pinos de los Alpes son hermosos. 8. Los reyes de Europa tienen muchos palacios. 9. Este mes tiene cinco lunes. 10. No hay dos Cervantes. 11. La Suiza es un país pequeño. 12. La fe da valor. 13. Las esposas (*wives*) de los oficiales hablan de las esposas (*handcuffs*) del marinero. 14. Los Ingleses y los Franceses son amigos. 15. Los Americanos son industriosos. 16. Los corta-plumas de Wostenholm son buenos. 17. El Brasil es más-grande que la Suiza. 18. Los plurales de las palabras pié, papá, mamá, sofá, etc., son piés, papás, mamás, sofás, etc.

THEME II.

1. [I]² am the³ son of a merchant. 2. Are you (*sing.*) from Madrid? 3. [We]² are Americans. 4. Are you (*plu.*) also Americans? 5. The son of the mariner is very young. 6. The ships of the English are very large. 7. The railroads of the United States are very long. 8. Truth has not two faces. 9. My cousins (*m.*) give apples to the girls. 10. The pines on the Alps near the Rhine in Switzerland are tall and fine. 11. The eyes and hair(s) of the Spanish are black or chestnut. 12. My brothers have English

¹ See § 66.

² Words in brackets [] are to be omitted.

³ See § 60 (*l*).

hats, and my sisters have French gloves. 13. The feet of the Chinese are small. 14. The rivers of America are large. 15. The love of (the) mothers is strong. 16. Two of my friends speak¹ English very well. 17. Do you give flowers to the ladies? 18. No, the Germans give flowers to the girls and to the ladies.

LESSON III.

THE NOUN WITH ARTICLE, AND AS DIMINUTIVE AND AUGMENTATIVE.

57. The definite article (which may here be called the inclusive article) is used where any and every member of a class is referred to: as, **El hombre es mortal**, *Man (any or every man) is mortal*; **La paciencia y la reflexion hacen fáciles muchas cosas**, *Patience and reflection make many things easy*.

58. **Señor, señora**, etc., when used in address (and proper names generally) take no article; but when not used in address (and proper names with adjectives²) generally take the article: as, **Señor doctor! La señora condesa. El señor Don³ Luis García.**

59. (a) Many names of countries take the article (others take it in some cases and not in others): as, **el Brasil, el Canadá, la China, la Florida**, etc. (b) Mountains and rivers generally (and some cities: as, **el Cairo, la Habana.**) take the article.

¹ See Exercise II. sen. 13.

² ([Except *santo*]: as, **el gran Luis**), but **san Pablo, santa Teresa**.

³ **Don** only used with Christian name.

60. Observe the following : (a) **El si cuando es conjuncion no tiene acento, Si** *when it is a conjunction has not an accent.* (b) **Tenia bañados de lágrimas los ojos,** *She had her eyes bathed in tears.* (c) **El domingo pasado,** *Last Sunday.* (d) **Son las siete,** *It is seven o'clock.* (e) **El oro es el metal más precioso,** *Gold is the most precious metal.* (f) **El rey de Prusia.** (g) **Los vinos de España.** (h) **Dos pesetas la libra.** (i) **El norte, el sud, etc.** (j) **El Tasso.** (k) **Historia de España; Vida de C.** (l) **Es hijo del capitan.** (m) **Estar en casa,** *to be at home.* (n) **El dolor y lágrimas resisto,** *I endure the pain and tears* (article not repeated).

61. INDEFINITE ARTICLE.—*Some* is generally understood: **as, tiene hijos,** *he has (some) children;* **vinieron soldados,** *(some) soldiers came;* **déme V. pan,** *give me some bread.* And in apposition and predicate indefinite article is generally omitted: **as, llegó á Bona,** *he came to Bonn, a city in Prussia;* **es Aleman,** *he is a German;* **la vida es sueño,** *life is a dream.*

62. AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.—Many nouns and adjectives (and a few participles and adverbs) increase or decrease, or otherwise change their meaning, by assuming certain terminations. The most usual augmentatives are : **on, ona ; azo, aza ; ote, ota ; acho, acha.** Diminutives are: **ito, ita ; illo, illa ; ico, ica ; uelo, uela ; hombre, man ; hombron,¹ big man ; fusilazo, a gun-shot ; señor, gentleman ; señorito, little or young gentleman ; señora, lady ; señorita, little or young lady ; María, Mary ; Mariquita, little Mary.²**

¹ Also **hombrazo,** *very big man;* **hombracho** or **hombrote,** *monstrous or ridiculous man.*

² Other cases will appear in sentences.

PRESENT TENSE OF *tener*, *to have*.

tengo, <i>I have.</i>	tenemos, <i>we have.</i>
V. tiene, <i>you have.</i>	VV. tienen, <i>you have.</i>
tiene, <i>he, she, it has.</i>	tienen, <i>they have.</i>

VOCABULARY III.

el Alejandro, <i>Alexander.</i>	la Berna, <i>Berne.</i>
amigote, <i>great friend.</i>	calentura, <i>fever.</i>
amiguito, <i>little friend.</i>	capital, <i>capital.</i>
animal, <i>animal.</i>	carne, <i>meat.</i>
bastonazo, <i>blow with a cane.</i>	casita, <i>little house.</i>
Canadá, <i>Canada.</i>	condesa, <i>countess.</i>
conde, <i>count.</i>	cosa, <i>thing.</i>
corazon, <i>heart.</i>	Habana, <i>Havana.</i>
cristiano, <i>Christian.</i>	mano, <i>hand.</i>
descuido, <i>heedlessness.</i>	memoria, <i>memory.</i>
espíritu, <i>spirit.</i>	Pepita, <i>Josephine.</i>
hierro, <i>iron.</i>	prieta, <i>haste.</i>
hugonote, <i>Huguenot.</i>	Sena, <i>Seine.</i>
Juanito, <i>little John.</i>	como, <i>how.</i>
nombre, <i>name.</i>	católico, <i>Catholic.</i>
papel, <i>paper.</i>	cuándo, <i>when.</i>
perro, <i>dog.</i>	déme V., <i>give me.</i>
perrillo, <i>little dog.</i>	diez, <i>ten (o'clock).</i>
primito, <i>little cousin.</i>	en, <i>in.</i>
puerto, <i>port.</i>	esto, <i>this.</i>
Rin, <i>Rhine.</i>	feliz, <i>happy, good.</i>
Ródano, <i>Rhone.</i>	inmortal, <i>immortal.</i>
vecino, <i>neighbor.</i>	meridional, <i>south.</i>
(el) agua (f.), <i>water.</i>	porqué, <i>why.</i>
la avecita, <i>little bird.</i>	qué, <i>what.</i>
ballena, <i>whale.</i>	ricazo, <i>very rich.</i>
Barcelona, <i>Barcelona.</i>	

EXERCISE III.

1. Las ballenas son animales. 2. ¿ Señor Sanchez habla' V. inglés? 3. Si, y la señora Sanchez y la pe-

¹ See § 49.

queña Pepita, hablan frances. 4. El Canadá y la Florida son paises de América. 5. El Ródano, el Rin, la Sena son rios de Europa. 6. El señor conde de N. es mi vecino. 7. Son las diez. 8. El señorito era hijo de un mercader. 9. Alejandro tuvo (*had*) el nombre de grande. 10. La señorita tiene calentura. 11. Tiene feliz memoria. 12. Tiene buen corazon. 13. Tiene á su vecino por buen cristiáno. 14. Déme V. agua. 15. Mi amigote da un bastonazo al perro. 16. Mi amiguito tiene una casita de papel. 17. Un buque de hierro está en el puerto de Barcelona.

THEME III.

1. The spirit of man is immortal. 2. Havana is the capital of (1a) Cuba. 3. The why, the when, and the how are not always easy. 4. The countess gives a hat to the little John. 5. Brazil is a country of South America. 6. The young lady has small hands. 7. It is ten o'clock. 8. Iron is the most useful metal. 9. Haste and heedlessness make¹ many things difficult. 10. My father was an Englishman. 11. The Huguenots were Protestants. 12. Give me [some] meat. 13. He came² to Berne, [a] city of Switzerland. 14. My little cousins have little dogs and little birds. 15. The merchant is very rich. 16. Gladstone has a good memory. 17. My father regards³ (the) Mr. Sanchez as⁴ [a] good Catholic.

¹ See § 57, last sentence.

² See § 61.

³ *Regards* = *tiene*.

⁴ *As* = *por*.

LESSON IV.

ADJECTIVES.

63. The rules for the plural of adjectives are in general the same as for the plural of nouns; and an adjective qualifying two or more nouns is usually in the masculine¹ plural: as, **boca y ojos pequeños,**² *small mouth and eyes.*

64. Adjectives ending in **o** in the masculine, proper adjectives,³ and most of those ending in **an, on, and or,** change the final letter into (or add) **a** for the feminine; and nearly all others (in **a, e** [not **ete, ote**], **i, l, r, s, z**) remain unchanged in the feminine: as, **frio, cold, fria;** **frances, French, francesa;** **holgazán, indolent, holgazana;** **traidor, treacherous, traidora;** but **agricola** (m. and f.), *agricultural.*

65. (a) Adjectives, except such as indicate an inherent quality (as, **duro hierro**), or number or quantity (as, **dos, mucho**), regularly follow⁴ their nouns, though some change their meaning according as they stand before (in figurative sense) or (in literal sense) after their noun: as, **la mano trémula** (*trembling*); **mucho vino;** **un pobre escritor, a poor writer;** **un escritor pobre, an indigent writer.** (b) The position of the adjective often depends much on the euphony of the sentence.

¹ But feminine if all nouns are feminine.

² *Adjective agrees with first noun if it precedes; and with plural nouns adjectives agree with the nearest.*

³ Not already ending in **a.**

⁴ Only **todo** (*all*) can precede the article: as, **todos los reyes,** *all the kings.*

66. Alguno (*some*), bueno,¹ malo,¹ ninguno (*not any*), postrero² (*latter*), primero³ (*first*), tercero² (*third*), and uno lose o before masculine nouns (or nouns preceded by adjectives) in the singular; grande¹ generally loses the last syllable (*de*) before all nouns (masc. or fem.) in the singular beginning with any consonant, ^{always when it does not say or quantify} except h; [^]santo¹ (*not santa*) generally becomes [^]san before [^]the names of New Testament characters and calendar saints; cualquiera, *any*, and its plural, cualesquiera, may lose the final a immediately before (not after) any noun: as, el primer hombre, cualquier libro.

67. The adjective, both singular and plural, may be used as a noun: as, el bueno, *the good one*; los buenos, *the good ones*; and lo bueno, *the good*.

PRESENT TENSE OF *estar*,⁵ *to be*.estoy, *I am*.estamos, *we are*.V. está, *you are*.VV. están, *you are*.está, *he, she, it is*.están, *they are*.

VOCABULARY IV.

el aconsejador, *counsellor*.el filósofo, *philosopher*.Ateneo, *Athenæum*.invierno, *winter*.autor, *author*.Mateo, *Matthew*.consejo, *advice*.negocio, *affair*.cuchillo, *knife*.Pablo, *Paul*.

¹ Buen, mal, gran, and san must immediately precede the noun; otherwise bueno, etc., are used.

² Sometimes o is retained in this word.

³ This and some others of these words occasionally lose a of the feminine form.

⁴ Occasionally also before vowels.

⁵ The difference in meaning between *ser* and *estar* will be noted in Lesson V.

el personaje, <i>personage</i> .	con, <i>with</i> .
sabio, <i>wise</i> .	contentísimo, <i>very well pleased</i> .
Salvador, <i>Saviour</i> .	docto, <i>learned</i> .
segundo, <i>second</i> .	feroz, <i>ferocious</i> .
traje, <i>dress</i> .	fiel, <i>faithful</i> .
la batalla, <i>battle</i> .	griego, <i>Greek</i> .
desgracia, <i>misfortune</i> .	latino, <i>Latin</i> .
estacion, <i>season</i> .	literario, <i>literary</i> .
fama, <i>fame</i> .	negro, <i>black</i> .
fortuna, <i>fortune</i> .	nuevo, <i>new</i> .
guerra, <i>war</i> .	para, <i>for</i> . [rich.
iglesia, <i>church</i> .	pobre, { after noun, <i>poor, not</i>
lengua, <i>language</i> .	{ before n., <i>poor, worth-</i>
política, <i>politics</i> .	protestante, <i>Protestant</i> . [less.
sociedad, <i>society</i> .	tenía, <i>had</i> .
ahora, <i>now</i> .	útil, <i>useful</i> .
brillante, <i>brilliant</i> .	venir, <i>to come</i> .
científico (-a), <i>scientific</i> .	verdadero, <i>true</i> .

EXERCISE IV.

1. Las lenguas latina y griega son bellas. 2. El invierno es la estación fría del año. 3. El rey y la reina, contentísimos del libro, hicieron (*made or had*) venir al autor. 4. Un muchacho holgazán ó una muchacha holgazana es una desgracia cruel (*severe*) para sus padres. 5. Los grandes hombres no tienen siempre casas grandes. 6. Una mala pluma es una amiga traidora. 7. El primer libro del Nuevo Testamento es el de San Mateo. 8. San Daniel, San Pablo y Santa María eran grandes personajes. 9. Déme V. un cuchillo cualquiera. 10. El bueno ama (*loves*) lo bueno, el poeta ama lo bello, el sabio ama lo verdadero. 11. Todos los hombres aman (*love*) lo agradable. 12. Pocas mujeres aman la política. 13. El

¹ See page 10, note 2.

perro es un animal fiel y útil. 14. La señora del traje negro es la hermana del oficial inglés. 15. Napoleon era un gran general.

THEME IV.

1. The whole battle was an affair of some seconds. 2. Galdos and Valera are two great Spanish authors. 3. Echegaray is now the great dramatic author of Spain. 4. The Athenæum is a scientific and literary society in Madrid. 5. Madrid has few Protestant churches. 6. The wise do not love (see Ex. IV. sen. 11) war. 7. A poor (not rich) author is not always a worthless author. 8. St. Paul was a very learned man. 9. St. Mary was the mother of the Saviour. 10. The philosopher loves the good, the beautiful, and the true. 11. The philosopher Lotze had brilliant and beautiful eyes. 12. Fortune and fame are treacherous friends. 13. Elephants have small mouths and eyes. 14. Ferocious animals are the enemies of man. 15. A wise father gives wise counsel to his children. 16. A wise counsellor is a good friend.

LESSON V.

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES AND DISTINCTION
BETWEEN *ser* AND *estar*.

68. The comparative degree is formed by prefixing *más*, *more*, or *ménos*, *less*, to the positive, and the superlative is generally formed by prefixing the article or possessive adjective to the comparative : as, "No había en el pueblo hombre tan acaudalado como

él, ni más soberbio ni ménos caritativo"—“*There was not in the town (a) man so wealthy as he, nor more proud, nor less charitable.*”

69. Some adjectives have double forms of comparison ; the most important are :

(1) bueno, mejor, el etc. mejor (also rarely más and el más bueno) óptimo.³

(2) malo, peor, el etc. peor (also rarely más and el más malo) pésimo.³

(3) grande, mayor,¹ el etc. mayor, or más, and el ménos grande, máximo.³

(4) pequeño, menor,² el etc. menor, or más, and el más pequeño, mínimo.³

(5) alto, superior, suprimo.

(6) bajo, inferior, ínfimo.

70. Other forms of comparison : as, tan — como (see § 68), tanto — cuanto (with verb after cuanto), más — que (de),⁴ cuanto más, tanto más, etc., will be found : as, es más docto de lo⁵ que parece (*appears*).

71. (a) When the article or a possessive adjective precedes the noun, a superlative without the article may follow ; and *at*, *in*, and *of* with a superlative are generally rendered by *de* ; as, una de las posesiones más remotas de España es la Habana. (b) For *no* with comparative, and without full negative force, see § 223 (e).

72. The absolute superlative is sometimes formed

¹ Of persons older.

² Of persons younger.

³ Absolute superlative (very good, etc.); rarely used.

⁴ With numerals.

⁵ Used with verb in second clause ; being neuter with adjectives, but masculine or feminine with nouns.

with *bien*, *muy*,¹ *very*, etc.; but generally by dropping the final vowel or diphthong, and adding *ísimo* (or *érrimo*)² to the adjective, whose stem diphthong (*ie*, *ue*) becomes a simple vowel (*e*, *o*): as, *bueno*, *bonísimo*, *very good*. *C* of final syllables usually changes to *qu*, *g* to *gu*, *z* to *c*, *ble* to old form *bil*, and a few other changes will be noted: as, *fiel* (*faithful*), *fidelísimo*.

73. *To be* is rendered by *ser* when it refers to what is essential and permanent, and by *estar* for what is accidental and temporary: as, *la puerta* (*door*) *es de madera* (*wood*); *la puerta está abierta* (*open*); *es Español*, *he is a Spaniard*; *está en España*; *este hombre es bueno*; *este hombre está bueno* (*well*); *él es soldado*; *él está leyendo* (*reading*); *este es el niño que está enfermo*, but *eso es claro* or *está claro*.

VOCABULARY V.

el arado, <i>plough</i> .	la mina, <i>mine</i> .
campo, <i>country</i> .	noche, <i>night</i> .
clima, <i>climate</i> .	parte, <i>part</i> .
error, <i>error</i> .	pobreza, <i>poverty</i> .
esclavo, <i>slave</i> .	quietud, <i>quietness</i> .
escudero, <i>shield-bearer</i> .	sopa, <i>soup</i> .
médico, <i>doctor</i> .	tierra, <i>land</i> .
la calle, <i>street</i> .	tumba, <i>tomb</i> .
controversia, <i>discussion</i> .	andante, <i>errant</i> .
desdicha, <i>misfortune</i> .	aquel, <i>that</i> .
edad, <i>age</i> .	avanzado, <i>advanced</i> .
elocuencia, <i>eloquence</i> .	beneficentísimo, <i>very beneficent</i> .
figura, <i>stature</i> .	bonito, <i>very pretty</i> .
María, <i>Mary</i> .	celebérrimo, <i>very celebrated</i> .

¹ *Muy* sometimes means *too*.

² Added to words ending in *ro*, *re*, which letters are dropped and *érrimo* takes their place.

(se) dice, <i>they say.</i>	óptimo, <i>best.</i>
dulce, <i>sweet.</i>	perdido, <i>lost.</i>
enérgico, <i>vigorous.</i>	poco, <i>little.</i>
esperar, <i>hope.</i>	prudente, <i>prudent.</i>
fríisimo (frio), <i>very cold.</i>	riquísimo (rico), <i>very rich.</i>
gana (ganar), <i>gains.</i>	tan—como, <i>as (thorough) as.</i>
gasta (gastar), <i>spends. [happy.</i>	tan bien como, <i>as well as.</i>
infelícisimo (infeliz), <i>very un-</i>	tanto más—que, <i>the more as.</i>
larguísimo (largo), <i>very large.</i>	tenido, <i>had. See tener.</i>
metieronle (meter), <i>they laid him.</i>	valiente, <i>valiant.</i>
muy español, <i>a thorough Span-</i>	vivo vivo, <i>living.</i>
<i>iard.</i>	

EXERCISE V.

1. Este libro es pequeño, ese es más pequeño y aquel es el más pequeño de todos. 2. Este error fué (*was*, see § 165) grandísimo. 3. Á una edad tan poco avanzada es ya doctísimo. 4. Paris es más grande que Nueva York. 5. Cuanto más virtuosos son los hombres, tanto más felices son. 6. María es la mejor amiga de mi hermana. 7. Cuanto ménos dinero gana tanto más gasta. 8. ¿Habla V. español tan bien como su hermano? 9. Se dice en español “el más bonito” muchacho” ó “el muchacho más bonito,” pero solamente el clima más frio. 10. Whittier tiene más de ochenta años. 11. Pasé (*I passed*, see § 144) la noche con más quietud de la² que podía (*I could*, see § 196) esperar. 12. Su elocuencia es más enérgica que dulce. 13. Más dice la señora Teresa de lo² que piensa (*thinks*, see § 177, and *pensar*, voc.). 14. Es tanto más amable cuanto que es modesta. 15. El tiene la más mala (peor) figura

¹ Superlatives may never precede their nouns, except when their positives may do so.

² See note 5, page 22.

que jamas he visto. 16. Él ha perdido la mayor parte de su dinero.

THEME V.

1. Of the two sisters the older is the more prudent, and the younger the more beautiful. 2. Dr. Agnew is one of the wisest doctors in the land. 3. Sancho is one of the best shield-bearers that [a] knight-errant has had. 4. This woman is very beneficent. 5. He is as valiant as wise. 6. (The) Mr. Benot is a thorough Spaniard. 7. They laid him living in a tomb. 8. Luther's discussions are very celebrated. 9. The soup is good, but it is very cold. 10. I am better in the country than in the city. 11. The mines of California are very rich. 12. The streets of Paris are very broad. 13. Slaves are very unhappy. 14. My best friend is very ill. 15. They are as thorough gentlemen as he. 16. Poverty is not the greatest misfortune. 17. Most (the greater part of) birds fly (*vuelan*). 18. The best ploughs come from Syracuse.

LESSON VI.

NUMERALS.

CARDINALS.

0 zero.	5 cinco.	10 diez.
1 uno, -a, un. ¹	6 seis.	11 once.
2 dos.	7 siete.	12 doce.
3 tres.	8 ocho.	13 trece.
4 cuatro.	9 nueve.	14 catorce.

¹ These words agree with the nouns to which they refer (see § 66); but *uno* and *una* take no plurals as numerals.

15 quince.	100 ciento, cien. ^{5 6}
16 diez y seis. ³	101 ciento y uno, -a. ¹
17 diez y siete.	200 doscientos, ³ -as. ³
18 diez y ocho.	500 quinientos, -as.
19 diez y nueve.	700 setecientos, -as.
20 veinte.	900 novecientos, ⁴ -as.
21 veinte y uno, -a. ¹	1000 mil. ⁵
30 treinta.	1100 mil ⁵ y ciento.
40 cuarenta.	100,000 cien mil.
50 cincuenta.	1,000,000 un million, un cuento.
60 sesenta.	1,000,000,000 un millar de cuentos.
70 setenta.	1 billion (un millon de millones).
80 ochenta.	1 trillion (un millon de billones).
90 noventa.	

ORDINALS.¹

1st primero, -a.	13th décimo (-a) ^{tercio (-a)}
2d segundo, -a.	20th vigésimo, -a. ^{4th décimo (y) cuarto.}
3d tercero, -a.	21st vigésimo (-a) primo (-a).
4th cuarto, -a.	30th trigésimo, -a.
5th quinto, -a.	40th cuadragésimo, -a.
6th sexto, -a; sexto, -a.	50th quincuagésimo, -a.
7th séptimo, -a; sétimo, -a.	60th sexagésimo, -a.
8th octavo, -a.	70th septuagésimo, -a.
9th noveno, -a; nono, -a.	80th octogésimo, -a.
10th décimo, -a.	90th nonagésimo, -a.
11th undécimo, -a.	101st centésimo(-a) prim(er)o(-a).
12th duodécimo, -a. ⁷	

74. The cardinals are used in speaking (*a*) of the days of the month (except the first): as, **el cinco de**

¹ See note on page 25. ³ Dos cientos, etc.; also docientos.

² Also written *dieciseis*, etc., *veintiunc*, etc.

⁴ Others not mentioned formed regularly.

⁵ Cannot have *un* before it (except as in **201,000, doscientos y un mil**).

⁶ *Cien* used as multiplier before another numeral, or immediately before a noun, or a noun preceded by an adjective.

⁷ Other ordinal forms (*doceno*, *treinteno*, *setuagésimo*, etc.) are often met with.

mayo (*May*), but **el primero de enero** (*January*).
 (b) In speaking of ~~the~~ ^{foreign} sovereigns, after the tenth: ^{as, *miss covers up*} ~~the~~ ^{after the} **Luis catorce**, but **Felipe cuarto**. (c) Generally in speaking of chapters, pages, verses, etc.: as, **página treinta**, *page thirty*. (d) In speaking of age (generally): as, **á los doce años de edad** (*age*).

75. (a) **With** numerals¹ **de**, not **que**, is used for *than*: as, **más de cien perros**. (b) The numeral before **mil** agrees in gender with the noun: as, **doscientas mil aves** (*birds*). (c) **Mil** takes **es** only as noun: as, **esta hombre gana muchos miles** (*thousands*). (d) **Uno** takes **no s** (except as indefinite pronoun): as, **treinta y un hombres**. (e) **y** belongs only between the last two terms of compound numerals: as, **mil ochocientos y ocho**.

76. Notice the following: (a) **uno y uno**, *one and one*; (b) **uno por uno**, *one by one*; (c) **quince dias**, *two weeks*; (d) **una vez**, *once*; (e) **dos veces**, *twice*; (f) **la mitad** (*media parte*), *the half*; (g) **la tercera parte**, *the third*; (h) **dos pesos y cuarto**, $2\frac{1}{4}$ *dollars*; (i) **simple**, *simple*; (j) **doble**, *double*; (k) **un par**, *a pair*; (l) **una docena**, *a dozen*.

77. We ask for the day of the month thus: (a) **¿Cuántos estamos (del mes)?** *At what are we of the month?* **A primero, á veinte**, etc. (b) **¿Qué día del mes tenemos (or es hoy)?** *What day of the month have we (or is to-day)?* **El primero, el dos, el diez**, etc. We give the year thus: **El año (de), en el año (de), or en² mil ocho cientos ochenta y nueve**. **Cádiz, agosto 6 de 1820**.

¹ But **que** is sometimes used when the sentence is negative.

² But numeral cannot be given *without preposition*.

78. For sentences asking and telling the time of the day, see Exercise VI.

PRESENT TENSE OF *haber*, *to have* (AUX.).

he, <i>I have.</i>	hemos, <i>we have.</i>
V. ha, <i>you have.</i>	VV. han, <i>you have.</i>
ha, <i>he, she, it has.</i>	han, <i>they have.</i>

VOCABULARY VI.

el agosto, <i>August.</i>	la obra, <i>work.</i>
año, <i>year.</i>	página, <i>page.</i>
Becquer, ¹ <i>Becquer.</i>	parte, <i>part.</i>
dinero, <i>money.</i>	primavera, <i>spring (time).</i>
febrero, <i>February.</i>	tarde, <i>afternoon.</i>
el (la) habitante, <i>inhabitant.</i>	vez, <i>time.</i>
huerto, } <i>garden.</i>	agradable, <i>agreeable.</i>
jardín, }	ancho, <i>broad.</i>
junio, <i>June.</i>	aquí, <i>here.</i>
lugar, <i>village.</i>	cálido, <i>hot.</i>
marzo, <i>March.</i>	cuánto, <i>how much?</i>
mayo, <i>May.</i>	de, <i>than of.</i>
minuto, <i>minute.</i>	dentro, <i>within.</i>
otoño, <i>fall.</i>	hace, <i>since.</i>
par, <i>pair.</i>	largo, <i>long.</i>
setiembre, <i>September.</i>	medio (a), <i>half.</i>
verano, <i>summer.</i>	murió (murir), <i>died.</i>
volúmen, <i>volume.</i>	nació (nacer), <i>was born.</i>
la biblioteca, <i>library.</i>	por, <i>by, in.</i>
mañana, <i>morning.</i>	sabe (saber) V., <i>do you know?</i>
mitad, <i>half.</i>	todavía, <i>yet.</i>

EXERCISE VI.

1. ¿Qué hora es? Es la una, son las cinco. 2. Es la una y media; son las dos, ménos cuarto. 3. Son

¹ For proper names of persons and places see vocabulary of proper names, page 219.

las ocho y cuarto, son las nueve y diez minutos. 4. Son las seis, ménos siete minutos y medio. 5. ¿Á qué hora está V. en casa? 6. Á las tres, al (á) medio día, á media noche, por la mañana. 7. Juan estuvo (*was*, see § 167) en el lugar hace dos horas. 8. Pedro estará (*will be*, see § 167) aquí dentro de tres horas. 9. Un mes tiene veinte y ocho, veinte y nueve, treinta ó treinta y un días. 10. Un año tiene trescientos sesenta y cinco ó trescientos sesenta y seis días. 11. ¿Cuándo va (*go*, see § 214) V. á Madrid? Voy (*I go*, see § 214) los lunes por la tarde. 12. Buenos días (buenas tardes), buenas noches, señor, cómo está V.? 13. Los Estados Unidos tienen más de sesenta millones de habitantes. 14. El segundo volumen de las obras de Becquer estaba (see § 167) en la biblioteca. 15. Victor Hugo estuvo en Madrid en mil ocho cientos y once. 16. Carlos cuarto sucedió á Carlos tercero, el doce de agosto de 1788. 17. “Málaga,¹ doce de abril.”

THEME VI.

1. Do you know what time it is? 2. It is not yet half-past one. 3. What day of the month is it? 4. It is the twenty-fourth of March. 5. The day has twenty-four hours, the hour has sixty minutes. 6. February is the second month of the year. 7. My father goes to-day, the first of June, to Europe. 8. Is the winter cold in Madrid? 9. No; and the fall and spring are very agreeable, but the summer is very

¹ As at the head of a letter.

² The preposition á is not used before a personal object preceded by a numeral.

hot. 10. How much money do you wish (**quiere V.**)? 11. Give me a hundred and fifty pesetas. 12. The morning, the afternoon, and the night are the three parts of the day. 13. I see two² men in the park. 14. Twelve is the double of six, and the fifth part of sixty. 15. Cervantes was born in 1547, and died at sixty-eight years of age. 16. Lowell is 70 years of age. 17. Louis the Fourteenth died the first of September (of¹) 1715, in the 77th year of his age. 18. How old are you? 19. My garden is (has) three hundred feet (**de largo**) long and one hundred and sixty feet broad. 20. The table is (has) six feet by four.

LESSON VII.

CONJUNCTIVE AND DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

79. (a) Conjunctive personal pronouns are joined with a verb, either as subject or object (direct or indirect). (b) Disjunctive personal pronouns are used without a verb, or if with a verb, are not governed by it.

80. FIRST PERSON :

	SING.	PLUR.
CONJUNCTIVE SUBJECT	yo	nosotros, nosotras ³
DIRECT AND INDIRECT OBJECT	me ⁴	nos
DISJUNCTIVE	mí	nosotros, nosotras ³

¹ **En** used when day of month is not given ; **de** when day of month is given. ² See note 2, page 29.

³ Rarely **nos**, which is sometimes singular.

⁴ When conjunctive direct and indirect forms take preposition (see note 2, page 10), they assume disjunctive forms: **á mí**, etc.

81. SECOND PERSON :

	SING.	PLUR.
CONJUNCTIVE SUBJECT	usted (V.)	ustedes (VV.)
DIRECT AND INDIRECT OBJ.	á usted (á V.)	á ustedes (á VV.)
DISJUNCTIVE	usted (V.)	ustedes (VV.)

82. THIRD PERSON :

	SING.	PLUR.
CONJUNCTIVE SUBJECT	él (m.), ella (f.)	ellos (m.), ellas (f.)
INDIRECT OBJECT	le " le "	les " les "
DIRECT OBJECT	le, lo ¹ " la ² "	los " las "
DISJUNCTIVE	él " ella "	ellos " ellas "

83.

	SING.
CONJUNCTIVE SUBJECT	ello (<i>it, so, that</i>), lo
INDIRECT OBJECT	á or para ello, le
DIRECT OBJECT	lo
DISJUNCTIVE	ello, lo

84. REFLEXIVE PRONOUN, or substitute for third person : *himself, herself, itself, themselves* :

	SING.	PLUR.
CONJUNCTIVE SUBJECT	—	—
INDIRECT OBJECT	se	se
DIRECT OBJECT	se	se
DISJUNCTIVE	sí	sí

85. SECOND PERSON : *thou, ye* (need rarely be used):

	SING.	PLUR.
CONJUNCTIVE SUBJECT	tú ³	vosotros, vosotras ⁴
INDIRECT AND DIRECT OBJECT	te	os, os
DISJUNCTIVE	tí	vosotros, vosotras ⁴

¹ Although *lo* is much used, *le* is preferred by many authorities. Some use *le* for persons or things personified, otherwise *lo*.

² Sometimes, but improperly, used for indirect object.

³ *Usted (V.)* and *ustedes (VV.)* will generally be used in this book, instead of those forms which are more appropriate for the family, etc., than for general use.

⁴ Rarely *vos.* which, like *os*, is sometimes singular.

86. Subject pronouns are very frequently omitted before verbs, unless required for emphasis or distinctness: as, **estoy, estamos, I am, we are.**

87. The subject pronouns may either precede or follow the verb, even in declarative sentences.

88. (a) Object pronouns' (direct or indirect) generally do, and always may, precede the verb (or the auxiliary in compound tenses) in the indicative mood, **yo le he visto (seen).** (b) Object pronouns almost always precede the subjunctive mood. (c) Pronouns nearly always follow the imperative proper (^{and} ~~not~~ subjunctive for imperative), and **d** falls away before **os** (except with ^{positive} **idos**), and **s** before **nos**: as, **maravillámonos, divertímonos.** (d) Object pronouns nearly always follow the infinitive and the gerund or present participle: as, **en viéndome solo, on seeing me alone.**

89. In conjunctive pronouns of the first and second person the direct object always precedes the indirect; and pronouns of the first and second person both precede the third; but the form **se** (direct or indirect) precedes all. Both or all three object pronouns keep together, either all before or all after the verb: as, **ríndeteme!** (or **tu te me rindes**), *surrender yourself to me*; **él me lo da, he gives it to me**; etc.

¹(a) For clearness, emphasis, or contrast the pronoun may be repeated in another form (with **á**): as, **Me reveló el secreto á mí, He revealed the secret to me. Á usted le han enviado un mensaje, They have sent a message to you. Á los desertores los han indultado de la pena de muerte, They have freed the deserters from the pain of death. Le dieron á la señora el primer asiento, They gave the lady the first seat.** (b) **Mismo** is often added to the pronoun for emphasis.

90. Of two conjunctive pronouns (neither being reflexive) of the third person, the indirect takes the form **se**, where otherwise such combinations as **le**, **la**, etc., would occur: as, **quiero darselo** (á mi hermanita), *I wish to give it to her (to my little sister)*.

91. **Lo** often refers to a neuter adjective, to a whole sentence, or in general to things without sex; used in predicate it means *so*: **Eres mi amigo? Lo soy.** *Are you my friend? I am so.*

92. **Se** is used with impersonal verbs, with reflexive and reciprocal verbs, and as equivalent for the passive voice: as, **se dice**, *it is said*.

93. (a) In exclamations **de** precedes the pronoun: as, **pobre de mí!** *poor me!* (b) **Conmigo**, **contigo**, **consigo** mean respectively *with me*, *with thee*, *with himself*, etc.

94. The indirect conjunctive pronoun is often used with the definite article instead of the possessives (with reference to parts of the body, the clothing, etc.): as, **se le llenaron los ojos de lágrimas**, in place of **sus ojos se llenaron de lágrimas**, *his eyes filled with tears*.

PRESENT OF **amar**, to love.

amo,	amamos,
V. ama,	VV. aman,
ama,	aman.

VOCABULARY VII.

el asiento, <i>seat.</i>	el periódico, <i>newspaper.</i>
bolsillo, <i>pocket.</i>	tiempo, <i>time.</i>
caballero, <i>horseman.</i>	la almendra, <i>almond.</i>
lápiz, <i>lead-pencil.</i>	gracias, <i>thanks (thank you).</i>
mediodía, <i>noon.</i>	muerte, <i>death.</i>
parque, <i>park.</i>	pena, <i>pain, punishment.</i>

la pluma, <i>pen.</i>	detras, <i>behind.</i>
sobrina, <i>niece.</i>	entre, <i>between.</i>
acercando (acercar), <i>approach-</i>	enviado (enviar), <i>sent.</i>
algo, <i>anything.</i>	[<i>ing.</i>] jamas, <i>never.</i>
aprender, <i>to learn.</i>	leer, <i>to read.</i>
conveniente, <i>suitable.</i>	mandar, <i>to send command.</i>
dando (dar), <i>giving.</i>	oportuno, { <i>opportune,</i>
decía, <i>said.</i>	{ <i>suitable.</i>
decir, <i>to say.</i>	sé, <i>I know.</i>
desdichado, <i>unhappy.</i>	veo, <i>I see.</i>

EXERCISE VII.

1. Tiene V. libros? Tengo ménos (de ellos) que V.
2. Tienen VV. vino? No lo tenemos en la casa.
3. La gramática española parece (*appears*) muy fácil, pero no lo es. Me parece que es difícil.
4. Va V. conmigo? Voy ahora al parque.
5. No sé si él ó ella está aquí.
6. ¿Me da V. el dinero á mí, ó á mi amigo? No se lo doy¹ á V.
7. Tiene V. algo que decirnos? Se lo diré (*I shall say*) á V. y no á él.
8. Voy (*I go*) á mandárselo á él. Es mejor mandárselo á ella que á él.
9. ¿Qué dice de ello? Nada dice de ello.
10. Están VV. contentos de ello? Sí estamos nosotros muy contentos de ello.
11. ¿(En) dónde estaba el niño? Estaba entre ellos y detras de ellas.
12. Le veo á él mismo divirtiendolos mucho.
13. Mirale (*see him*) nos decía el padre, acercándose á nosotros para decirnoslo.
14. Si V. tiene cartas para mí mándemelas V. á mi casa.
15. No puedo (*I am able*) mandárselas, porque no tengo criado.
16. Nosotros los soldados y caballeros ponemos² en ejecución lo que ellos piden.

¹ See § 182 (*J aim*)

² Ponemos = *we put*. We stands for soldados and caballeros.

THEME VII.

1. It seems to me to be now a suitable time to learn Spanish. 2. [Does] the boy wish to learn it? He does not wish to tell me. 3. Are the Spanish newspapers good? I never see them in America. 4. Unhappy me! my father has my books, my pen, and my pencil with him. 5. They have given (**dado**) us less than (to) them. Give the book to him and the letter to her. 6. Is it certain that he saw (**vió**) her to-day? It is said that he saw her at ten o'clock in the morning. 7. Have you something for her? I have something for her, for my brother, and for my sister. 8. Do you speak German? I speak it a little, but my brother speaks it better than I. 9. I have two German books; do you wish them? Yes, I wish them [in order] to read them. 10. If you wish to read them, I will give (**daré**) them to you to-day, or to-morrow, at noon. 11. John has something for the children, and goes with us to give it to them themselves. 12. He fills (**llena**) their hands with apples, and their pockets with money and (with) almonds. 13. Is she not my niece? Art thou not my brother? 14. Don Alfredo gave me this letter for you, and it is better to give it to you yourself. 15. How are you, gentlemen? We are much better to-day than yesterday, thank you. 16. If the ladies wish (**quieren**) the books, give them to them for me.

LESSON VIII.

CONJUNCTIVE AND DISJUNCTIVE POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

95. Conjunctive possessive adjectives precede their nouns, and are: SING. **mi**, *my*; **tu**, *thy*; **su**, *your, his, her, its*; **nuestro (-a)**, *our*; **vuestro (-a)**, *your*; **su**, *their*. PLUR. **mis**, **tus**, **sus**, **nuestros (-as)**, **vuestros (-as)**, **sus**.

96. Disjunctive possessive adjectives follow their nouns, and are: SING. **mio (-a)**, **tuyo (-a)**, **suyo (-a)**, **nuestro (-a)**, **vuestro (-a)**, **suyo (-a)**. PLUR. **mios (-as)**, **tuyos (-as)**, **suyos (-as)**, **nuestros (-as)**, **vuestros (-as)**, **suyos (-as)**.

97. The disjunctive forms are used: (a) In exclamation: ; **Madre mia!** (less emphatic, ; **Mi madre!**). Either form may be used if an adjective or participle precedes the noun: as, **mi querido padre**, or **querido padre mio**, *my dear father*. (b) When an article precedes the noun: as, (el or) **un criado mio**, or **uno de mis criados**, *a servant of mine*. (c) When an adverb precedes the noun: as, **tan amigos nuestros se mostraron**, *they showed themselves such friends of ours*. (d) Sometimes for emphasis, contrast, etc., and in certain expressions: as, **es culpa mia**, *it is my fault*.

98. The possessive must be repeated, unless it refers to the same person or object: as, **mi padre y mi madre**; **señor mio y amigo**, *sir and friend*.

99. The possessive pronouns¹ (used for, not with, a noun) may be formed by prefixing the definite article to the disjunctive possessive adjective forms: as, **el mio, las vuestras**.

100. Substitutes for the possessive pronouns are formed by placing **de** with the personal² pronoun after the definite article: as, **el de él, los de ella, la de nosotros, los de VV. (ustedes), las de ellos**, etc.

101. The forms **su, sus, suyo**, etc. (used also almost invariably instead of **vuestro, la vuestra**, etc.), being ambiguous and meaning either *his, her, hers, its, you and yours, their and theirs*, it is often better to use **de** with personal pronoun: as, **su casa de él, his house; su casa de ella, her house; sus cartas de V., your letters**. (b) And the definite article³ often replaces the possessive, sometimes without noun: as, **la casa de él y la (casa) de ella; los sombreros de VV., your hats**.

102. *Own* with a possessive is rendered by **propio** or **mismo**: as, **esas casas son tuyas propias; veo mi propio libro**.

103. The possessive pronoun preceded by **lo** refers generally to something possessed: as, **lo tuyo y lo mío, thine and mine, thy property and mine, what belongs to me and thee**.

PRESENT OF *comer, to eat*.

como,	comemos,
V. come,	VV. comen,
come,	comen.

¹ Unless *mine*, etc., in predicate *to be* are emphatic, article is omitted: as, **el lápiz es mío**.

² With the verb *to be*, **de** with a personal pronoun, or **de** with possessive and noun, is often used: as, **este libro es de él**.

³ See also § 94.

VOCABULARY VIII.

el almacén, <i>store.</i>	adornado (adornar), <i>adorned.</i>
campo, <i>field.</i>	ajeno, <i>another.</i>
candor, <i>candor.</i>	ántes de, <i>before.</i>
carruaje, <i>carriage.</i>	aquello, <i>that.</i>
coche, <i>coach.</i>	aunque, <i>although.</i>
criado, <i>servant.</i>	conocido, (<i>well</i>) <i>known.</i>
dolor, <i>pain.</i>	corriente, <i>current, present.</i>
genio, <i>genius.</i>	cortado (se cortar), <i>cut.</i>
gusto, <i>pleasure.</i>	cuyo (-a), <i>whose.</i>
maestro, <i>teacher.</i>	edificado, <i>built.</i>
los modales, <i>manners.</i>	enmendar, <i>reform, improve.</i>
el pariente, <i>relative.</i>	escrito (-a), <i>written.</i>
príncipe, <i>prince.</i>	ese, <i>that.</i>
cuadro, <i>picture.</i>	estimado (estimar), <i>esteemed.</i>
talento, <i>talent.</i>	hablado (hablar), <i>spoken.</i>
vapor, <i>steam (steamboat).</i>	hecho (hacer), <i>made.</i>
vestido, <i>dress.</i>	llegado (llegar), <i>arrived.</i>
zapato, <i>shoe.</i>	obediente, <i>obedient.</i>
la cabeza, <i>head.</i>	porque, <i>because.</i>
carga, <i>charge, obligation.</i>	pues, <i>since.</i>
corte, <i>court city (capital).</i>	quitar, <i>to take off.</i>
exposicion, <i>exposition.</i>	recibido, <i>received.</i>
faltriquera, <i>pocket.</i>	tal vez, <i>often.</i>
ropa, <i>clothes.</i>	vender, <i>to sell.</i>
tropa, <i>troop, body of sol-</i>	venido (venir), <i>come.</i>
virtud, <i>virtue.</i> [diers.	ver, <i>to see.</i>
acerca de, <i>about concerning.</i>	

EXERCISE VIII.

1. Tengo un caballo mejor que el de mi hermano.
2. Mi libro y el de V. están aquí, pero el suyo (el de él) no está.
3. Nuestro maestro enseña mejor que el de V.
4. El de V. es más sabio que el nuestro. ¿No es verdad?
5. Juan no es tan laborioso como sus hermanos y sus padres.
6. Príncipe, vuestras tropas han llegado á tiempo.
7. Caballero, (sus modales) los

modales de V. no me agradan (*please*). 8. Hijos míos, vuestros sombreros están ya hechos. 9. Este lápiz es mío, este carruaje es suyo (de V., de VV.). 10. Uno de mis hermanos (*or un hermano mío*) ha venido á verme. 11. Los niños se divierten (*amuse*) con su tambor (*their drum*) y con sus juguetes (*their toys*). 12. Aunque la nuestra no se enmiende (*improve*), siempre da (*gives*) gusto ver enmendar la vida ajena. 13. Se mostraron (see § 97) verdaderos amigos suyos. 14. Veo á mi señora (amiga) que es tu amiga puesto que tú lo' eres mío. 15. Despedirse de su casa, tal vez es dura cosa. 16. He recibido la suya² (carta) de 12 del corriente (mes). 17. Con esta carga nacemos (*we are born*)—las mujeres (la) de ser obedientes.

THEME VIII.

1. Whose gloves are these? Mine. And that hat? His. 2. My father and my mother are at home in the court city. 3. Your houses are well built, and your gardens adorned with beautiful flowers. 4. His genius and talent are esteemed; and their candor and virtue are well known. 5. All the pictures are at the exposition, except yours and ours. 6. Is this coach hers? Yes, it is hers, I am sure; it is not mine. 7. What is the matter with thee (que tienes), my son? I am not well; I have a headache. 8. Her letter is written better than his; this is his, and that is hers. 9. Her head and her teeth ache (*duelen*), and she has cut her finger. 10. A friend of mine has spoken to a relative of his, concerning some busi-

¹ See § 91.

² *Business correspondence.*

ness of yours. 11. I am not going there, because I have my money in my pocket. 12. There is one of our neighbors, who wishes to sell one of his horses. 13. This field is my uncle's ; he has also a store, and a house in the town. 14. He rarely speaks with me of himself or of his business. 15. The steamboat has arrived. 16. The children take off their hats and put on¹ their pretty dresses.

LESSON IX.

THE DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES AND DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

104. The demonstrative adjectives (used with nouns) are : **este**, *this (by me)*; **ese**, *that (by you)*; **aquel**, *that (yonder)*.

105. (a) They vary as follows :

SING.			PLUR.	
este (<i>m.</i>),	esta (<i>f.</i>),	esto (<i>n.</i>). ²	estos (<i>m.</i>),	estas (<i>f.</i>).
ese ,	esa ,	eso . ²	esos ,	esas .
aquel ,	aquella ,	aquello . ²	aquellos ,	aquellas .

(b) Other unusual demonstrative forms are **estotro**, etc., **esotro**, etc., **aquel otro**, etc., **aqueste** (*this*), etc., **aquese** (*that*), etc.

106. (a) The demonstrative adjectives are not always repeated when the meanings of the words referred to are similar : as, **refrene V. esa furia y movimiento**, *restrain that fury and movement*. (b)

¹ Se ponen.

² The forms ending in **o** (**esto**, **eso**, **aquello**) are never really demonstrative adjectives, since they are never used with, but always for, nouns.

They may be placed after the noun, in contempt, anger, or irony: as, **al pícaro ese le haré yo castigar**, *I will have that rogue punished.* (c) An antecedent must be easily understood, or the demonstrative keeps its adjective force, and the noun must be expressed: as, **¿quién es este hombre?** *who is this man?*

107. In form and general meaning the demonstrative pronouns are the same as the demonstrative adjectives, but are used *for*, not *with*, nouns, and **este** and **aquel** often mean respectively *the latter*, *the former*.

108. **Esto** may be used to refer in general to something mentioned by the speaker; **eso** to something mentioned by the person addressed: as, **esto que yo digo es cierto, eso que V. dice no es verdad**—*what (that which) I say is certain, what (that which) you say is not the truth.*

109. When in English the demonstrative pronoun (or even the personal pronoun) is followed by *who*, *which*, or *that* (expressed or understood), it may be generally rendered in Spanish by either the definite article or demonstrative pronoun, and the article and relative or demonstrative must not be separated. **Mis libros y los que (or aquellos que) él tiene**, *my books and those which he has*; **déselo V. al que (or á aquel que) primero venga**, *give it to him who comes first*; **yerran los que dicen eso**, *those are mistaken who say that.*

110. (a) The expressions *namely*, *that is*, or *that is to say* are translated by **esto es** or **es decir**: as, **me dijo que le comprara lo siguiente, esto es**—*he told me to buy him the following, namely.* (b) In com-

mercial style *en esta* means *in this (my) place* (*ciudad* or *plaza* understood); *en esa* means *in that (your) place* (*ciudad* or *plaza* understood). (c) Other such constructions will be noted, especially as in Exercise IX. sen. 10.

PRESENT TENSE OF *recibir*, *to receive*.

recibo,	recibimos,
V. recibe,	VV. reciben,
recibe,	reciben.

VOCABULARY IX.

el amor, <i>love</i> .	ayer, <i>yesterday</i> .
árbol, <i>tree</i> .	bajo, <i>under</i> .
estante, <i>shelf</i> .	cantando, <i>recounting</i> .
exceso, <i>excess</i> .	comprado (comprar), <i>bought</i> .
folleto, <i>pamphlet</i> .	cogido (coger), <i>caught</i> .
movimiento, <i>movement</i> .	dividido, <i>divided</i> .
orador, <i>orator</i> .	estando, <i>being</i> .
siglo, <i>age, century</i> .	hacer, <i>to do</i> .
trabajo, <i>work, labor</i> .	incesantemente, <i>incessantly</i> .
tratado, <i>treatise</i> .	leyendo (leer), <i>reading</i> .
el (f.) arma, <i>arm (weapon)</i> .	lo que, <i>what</i> .
la barbaridad, <i>barbarity</i> .	mal, <i>ill</i> .
consecuencia, <i>consequence</i> .	miserable, <i>miserable</i> .
fruta, <i>fruit</i> .	necesario, <i>necessary</i> .
ilustracion, <i>enlightenment</i> .	poderoso, <i>powerful</i> .
mariposa, <i>butterfly</i> .	seguro, <i>surely</i> .
moderacion, <i>moderation</i> .	semejante, <i>similar</i> .
sabiduría, <i>knowledge</i> .	sentado, <i>seated</i> .
verdad, <i>truth</i> .	servir, <i>to serve</i> .
altanero, <i>haughty</i> .	siguiente, <i>following</i> .
ambicioso, <i>ambitious</i> .	valeroso, <i>courageous</i> .

EXERCISE IX.

1. Este libro que estoy leyendo, ese tratado que tiene V. en la mano, y aquel folleto que está sobre la

mesa, son de mi tío. 2. "Este es el siglo de la ilustración, decía el orador (me acuerdo [*I remember*] bien de ese día) "aquellos eran tiempos de mucha barbaridad." 3. He comprado en Madrid ese libro que está sobre la mesa, y aquel que está en el estante. 4. Ese buque que llegó ayer, y aquel que naufragó (*shipwrecked*) el año pasado, eran muy semejantes. 5. Mi libro, y el que (or aquel que) él tenía (*had*), están en el cuarto de V.; traigame (*bring*) V. el que (or aquel que) á V. le parezca (*may appear*) mejor. 6. Cómo van los negocios en esa (ciudad)? En esta no hay (*there is*) novedad. 7. Carlos era grande, Federico ambicioso; este (Federico) valiente, aquel (Carlos) poderoso. 8. Aquéllas dos mujeres son hermanas; la que tiene el sombrero negro, habla frances. 9. Aquel cuya sabiduría es poca, muchas veces es muy altanero. 10. Por consecuencia de lo (negocio) de ayer, Andrés ha tomado las (calzas) de Villadiego á la (or á lo) de Dios es Cristo (*Andrew has taken French leave like a good fellow*).

THEME IX.

1. This soldier is not courageous enough, but he is more valiant than that one. 2. This wine is from Malaga, that from Jerez, and that from Madeira. 3. Being seated under this tree, I have caught this pretty butterfly. 4. What is this? and that? I do not know what they are. 5. Prefer (*prefiera V.*) moderation to excess: the former will make (*hará*) you happy, the latter miserable. 6. He is a relative of that gentleman whom you met (*encontró*) here some days ago (*hace dias*). 7. That is what he may do (*puede hacer*); that is to say, what he ought to do.

8. Those who speak ill of her very surely do not know her. 9. He that is wise speaks when it is necessary; but he that only presumes (**presume**) to be so speaks incessantly. 10. I beg you to pass (*sub.*) me that fruit, because my neighbor does not wish any of these. 11. Who is that man with whom you have spoken on the street? He is my uncle. 12. This (man) who is my brother will represent (**sustituirá**) me when I may absent (**me ausente**) myself. 13. Divided were [the] knights and [the] squires; these recounting their labors, those their loves. 14. Gentlemen, those arms are not the ones with which we ought to serve ourselves.

LESSON X.

RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

111. The relative pronouns are : **que**¹ (invariable), *who, which, that*; **quien**² (only of persons and things personified), *who, he who*; **quienes**, *who, those who*; **el cual, la cual, los cuales, las cuales**, *who, which*; **el que, la que, los que, las que**, *who, he who, etc., which*; **lo cual, which**; **lo que, that which, what**; **cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas**, *of whom, of which, whose, which*; **aquel que, etc.**, *he who, etc.*; **aquello que, that (thing, etc.) which.**

¹ **Que** is not generally immediately preceded by a comma, as are **el cual**, etc., and is more closely related with its antecedent (which it generally immediately follows) than is **el cual**, etc. (*and other relatives*).

² (*a*) **Quien** also used as partitive: *as, quien se salvó á nado,*

112. The relative pronouns are never understood, but always expressed, and cannot be separated from their prepositions as in English : *the city I speak of*, *la ciudad de que hablo*.

113. **Que**,¹ which occurs more frequently than any other relative, is used for both persons and things ; it does not take **á** before it when referring to persons as object of verb, and takes article with it, (*a*) often when accompanied by a preposition ; (*b*) when it refers to whole sentence ; (*c*) to complete meaning of verb (article follows)—**Pedro es el que lo ha dicho** ; (*d*) to avoid ambiguity—**pidió la libertad de su hijo, la que consiguió**.

114. **El cual**,¹ etc. (more definite in form than **que**), lose the article and much of their relative force when used as partitives or comparatives : **as, cual llora, cual canta**, *one weeps, another sings* ; **estas frutas son cuales (tales) como las deseamos**, *these fruits are such as we desire* ; **¿cuál le hallé !** *how wretched I found him !* ; **conoció cual era la verdadera causa de su desgracia**, *he knew what was the true cause of his misfortune*.

115. **Cuyo**,² etc., have a relative and also a possessive force ; they agree in gender and number with the following noun (and so have the force of adjectives).

quien en lanchas. (*b*) When **quien** does not include its antecedent (but immediately follows it in same case), it cannot be subject of a preposition: not **el hombre quien**, but **el hombre que vino**.

¹ When preceded by prepositions (not **á**, except of things), **que** and **el cual**, etc., used without distinction.

² **Cuyo** never takes the article (nor does **quien**).

tives, to which the other relatives are sometimes similar): as, **allá está el príncipe, cuyos caballos hemos visto**, *there is the prince, whose horses we have seen.*

116. **Donde** with or without a preposition often has a relative force: as, **la posada donde pasé la noche; la casa en donde está; la ciudad adonde va.**

117. The interrogative pronouns¹ (also used except **quién** as interrogative adjectives) are: **quién**, *who*; **cuál**, *which*; **qué**,² *what*; **cuyo**, *whose* (or **de quién** [-es], *whose*): as, **con quiénes andan?** *with whom (plur.) are they going?*

118. **Cuál**, *which*, is used when one or more of several objects are referred to—as, **cuál es de V.?** *which is yours?*—and stands for **qué** in predicate with the verb *to be*: **¿cuáles son sus amigos?**

119. A question asked by a preposition and an interrogative pronoun require the same preposition in the answer: as, **¿Con quién vino?** **Conmigo** — *With whom did he come? With me.* And the answer takes **de** when the question had **cuyo**, etc.: as, **¿Cuyo es este reloj?** **De mi padre.** *Whose watch is this? My father's.*

IMPERFECT TENSE OF amar.

amaba,	amábamos,
V. amaba,	VV. amaban,
amaba,	amaban.

¹ Same forms used and under similar conditions in exclamation.

² In exclamations when followed by an adjective **qué** means *how*: as, **¿qué feliz!** *how happy!*

VOCABULARY X.

el conocimiento, <i>knowledge</i> .	la soledad, <i>loneliness</i> .
cuadro, <i>picture</i> .	aceptar, <i>to accept</i> .
delincuente, <i>criminal</i> .	admirar, <i>admire</i> :
deseo, <i>desire</i> . [fact].	cantar, <i>to sing</i> .
efecto (en efecto), <i>effect (in</i>	contemporaneo, <i>contemporary</i> .
ejército, <i>army</i> .	delante de, <i>before</i> .
interés, <i>interest</i> .	dicho, <i>said</i> .
pañó, <i>cloth</i> .	engañado, <i>deceived</i> .
precio, <i>price</i> .	engañar, <i>to deceive</i> .
reloj, <i>watch</i> .	entregado, { <i>handed</i> .
servicio, <i>service</i> .	{ <i>given</i> .
suceso, <i>event</i> .	estimar, <i>to esteem</i> .
la botánica, <i>botany</i> .	estudiar, <i>to study</i> .
cancion, <i>song</i> .	favorable, <i>favorable</i> .
ciencia, <i>science</i> .	lédjos, <i>far</i> .
comedia, <i>comedy</i> .	miserable, <i>miserable</i> .
libertad, <i>liberty</i> .	maduro (-a), <i>ripe</i> .
ociosidad, <i>idleness</i> .	responder, <i>to respond</i> .
persona, <i>person</i> .	tal, <i>such (such a)</i> .
prision, <i>prison</i> .	ya, <i>at all</i> .
respuesta, <i>answer, reply</i> .	

EXERCISE X.

1. Los señores que (*or á quienes, or á los cuales*) vimos (*we saw*) y con quienes hablé¹ estudian la botánica, una ciencia de la cual tengo muy poco conocimiento. 2. Se dice que el presidente está aquí? Quien lo dice, se engaña. 3. Los hombres á quienes vimos y de quienes (*or de los cuales*) huimos (*we fled*) eran nuestros hermanos. 4. Este jardin que (*that which*) no puede ser más hermoso, no está lédjos de mi casa. 5. El árbol cuya fruta está madura, está delante de la casa de que V. habla. 6. Él es, á quien

¹ See §§ 141, 142.

debo la vida. Pedro es el que lo ha dicho. 7. He estado en el campo, lo que me ha hecho mucho bien. 8. La canción que cantaba María es muy dulce. 9. ¡Qué de dinero (*or* cuánto dinero) y qué de cosas (*or* cuántas cosas) tienen VV.! 10. Tenía el desdichado una hija, la que todos los días iba (*went*) á la prisión. 11. Preguntáronle (*they asked*) de dónde era y qué hacía en aquella soledad: á lo cual respondió. 12. Veo al hijo de su hermana, á la cual (*sister*) *or* al cual (*son*) mi padre no conoce. 13. Veo allá unos hombres, cuyos sombreros son negros, ¿quiénes son? 14. Qué quiere V.? Quiero saber de quién (*cúyo*) es este buque y cuál es su precio.

THEME X.

1. A man that spends his life in idleness dies (*muere*) miserable. 2. Cervantes, whose works we admire, is the greatest of Spanish authors. 3. Lope de Vega, who died in 1635, was a great Spanish poet contemporary with (*de*) Cervantes. 4. He does not wish to accept any (*nenguna*) thing (of what) you offer him to-day. 5. I know the general of the army who has sent you this picture. 6. It was certainly not interest that inspired me with such a desire. 7. I met (*encontré*) a week ago the sons of that woman whom I know and esteem. 8. His answers are always favorable to the person to whom he gives them. 9. It is said that he is in fact a criminal, which I do not at all believe since this event. 10. He composed (*compuso*) a thousand comedies, many of which cost (*costaron*) him only one day of work. 11. A soldier has come who has handed me a letter

which came (**vino**) from my father. 12. It seems to me that he who fears being (to be) deceived ought to be so. 13. The book that I wish is that which treats of the war of Germany and that of Portugal. 14. To whom have you given the cloth? To the child. To which? To the large one. 15. To whose service is a son under greater obligation (more obliged [**obligado**]) than to that of his father? 16. Whose is this watch, and to whom have you brought (**traído**) it? It is my father's, and I have brought it to my mother.

LESSON XI.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS¹ AND PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES.

120. (a) Most of the so-called indefinite pronouns, when used with nouns, are more properly adjectives. (b) Except various compounds too numerous to mention, the most important indefinite pronouns are :

algo,	cualquiera,	nada,	quienquiera,
alguien,	cuanto,	nadie,	tal,
alguno,	fulano,	ninguno,	todo,
ambos,	mismo,	otro,	uno,
cada,	mucho,	poco,	varios.

¹ In Spanish the following pronouns : *nobody, none, not one, neither, nothing*—*nadie, ninguno, ni uno, ni uno ni otro, nada*—generally require that the verb be preceded by the negative when they are placed after it, but this negative is suppressed when they precede it : *en nada puede sobresalir, no puede sobresalir en nada. Jamas, never* (adv.), follows same rule.

121. **Algo**, *something* (as adverb *somewhat*), is not declined (*alguna cosa* being often used for *algo*), and an adjective qualifying *algo* is preceded by *de*: tengo algo (or alguna cosa) que decirle. ; Tiene V. algo de bueno? Este libro es algo difícil.

122. **Alguien** and **alguno** (-a), (-os), (-as), both mean *somebody* or *some one*; *alguien*, being undeclined, used only of persons and not allowing *de* immediately after it. **Alguno** refers to persons and things: ; Lo ha visto alguien (or alguno)? Quiero algun dinero y algunas letras de cambio (*letters of exchange*).

123. **Ambos** (-as), *both* (sometimes *entrambos*, though generally *los dos* or *uno y otro*, is used in this sense): ambos (los dos) están á caballo.

124. **Cada**, *each* or *every* (invariable), is used when a noun immediately follows; otherwise *cada uno* (-a), *cada cual*, are used: cada pais tiene sus costumbres; doy á cada uno cuatro vestidos.

125. (a) **Cualquiera**¹ (with plural *cualesquiera*), *whatever, whichever, whoever*, may follow its noun if singular, while *all that which* is rendered by *todo lo que*, etc.: dáme cualquier libro (or un libro cualquiera); haré (I will do) todo lo que V. me mande. (b) **Cual**, *such as*.

126. **Cuanto**, as *much as* or *how much, as many as* or *how many* (declined): as, tengo flores; ; cuántas?; no sé cuantas.

127. **Fulano**, *such a one*; **fulano y zutano**, *such and such a one*; **fulano, zutano y mengano**, *such, such and such a one*, all take the feminine form in a, but no plural: **fulano** (or **fulana** de tal) ha venido á hablarme; he visto está mañana á fulana, á zutana y á mengana.

128. **Mismo**, *same, very self* (declined): no soy la misma que te habló ayer; mi hijo me ha escrito lo mismo; el mismo (very) dia (or el dia mismo) ella misma vino á decírmelo.

129. **Mucho**, *much, many* (declined), 'as pronoun refers to persons; other uses as in English: muchos hablan á tontas y á locas (*sillily and madly*).

130. **Nada**², *not anything, nothing* (not declined), takes adjective (often preceded by *de*) in masculine; when used before an infinitive *que* precedes it: no dice nada (or nada dice); no tengo nada buen ni malo (or nada de nuevo) que decir.

¹ See § 66.

² See note 1, p. 49.

131. **Nadie**¹ (not declined) and **ninguno** (declined) both mean *nobody, no one*; **nadie** refers to persons only. **Ninguno** only (not **nadie**) is used with partitives (**de**): **nadie** (or **ninguno**) **está** aquí; **ninguno de esos soldados tiene miedo** (*fear*); **nadie ha venido**; **no espero** (*await*) **á nadie**.

132. **Otro**, *another, other* (declined): **déme V. otro**; **tengo otras cosas que hacer**.

133. **Poco**², *little, few* (declined): **había** (*there were*) **pocas mujeres en el teatro**; **gana poco**; **me dió un poco de pan**; **tomaré** (*I will take*) **unos pocos** (or **unos cuantos**).

134. **Quienquiera**, *whoever, whosoever, whomever* (not declined): **quienquiera que sea**, *whoever he may be*; **de quienquiera que V. hable**, *of whomever you speak*.

135. **Tal**, *such, such a one* (takes plur.): **tal ha reído** (*laughed*) **que llora** (*weeps*); **un tal lo ha dicho** (*said*); **no tiene tales casas**.

136. **Todo**, *all, every* (declined), is extensively used, and about as its English equivalents; before singular definite article or a pronoun, and in **el todo**, it means *the whole*: **as, he comido** (*eaten*) **todas las peras**; **el todo es mayor que una de sus partes**.

137. **Uno**³, *one* (sing.), *some, a few* (plur.), has many compounds (**as, uno y otro**, etc.); is used like **se** in **se dice**, *they say*: **la gente** (*people*) **dice**; **llama gente** (*some one calls*); **no está uno siempre contento**; **déme V. unas almendras** (*almonds*).

138. **Varios** (-as), *several*: **mi padre tiene varios de estos lápices, los he visto varias veces**.

PRETERITE TENSE OF amar.

amé,
V. amó,
amó,

amámos,
VV. amaron,
amaron.

¹ See note 1, p. 49.

² **Poquisimo** (-a), *but little*: **pocuísimos** (-as), *but few*.

³ **Uno** is frequently used in connection with **otro** expressed or understood.

VOCABULARY XI.

el apetito, <i>appetite.</i>	atento, <i>attentive.</i>
asunto, <i>subject.</i>	baladí, <i>frivolous.</i>
baul, <i>trunk.</i>	bañarse, <i>to bathe (one's self).</i>
cambio, <i>exchange.</i>	ciego, <i>blind.</i>
cuarto, <i>farthing.</i>	convertir, <i>to change.</i>
deber, <i>duty.</i>	dichoso, <i>happy.</i>
esfuerzo, <i>effort.</i>	difícil, <i>difficult.</i>
océano, <i>ocean.</i>	diligente, <i>diligent.</i>
pais, <i>country.</i> [contrary).	dormir, <i>to sleep.</i>
reves (al reves), <i>back (on the</i>	ensartado, <i>strung, linked.</i>
romance, <i>romance.</i>	escribir, <i>to write.</i>
tono, <i>tone.</i>	escuchar, <i>to listen.</i>
verano, <i>summer.</i>	explicar, <i>to explain.</i>
vicio <i>vice.</i>	famoso, <i>famous.</i>
la aventura, <i>adventure.</i>	funesto, <i>lamentable.</i>
ayuda, <i>aid.</i>	ignorar, <i>to be ignorant of.</i>
camisa, <i>shirt.</i>	impedir, <i>to prevent.</i>
costumbre, <i>custom.</i>	llevado á cabo, <i>achieved.</i>
cuenta, <i>account, bill.</i>	lograr, <i>to gain.</i>
especulacion, <i>speculation.</i>	manifestado, <i>showed.</i>
experiencia, <i>experience.</i>	nunca, <i>never.</i>
faccion, <i>feature.</i>	pensar, <i>to think.</i>
filosofía, <i>philosophy.</i>	pintado, <i>described.</i>
hazaña, <i>exploit.</i>	preguntado, <i>asked.</i>
legua, <i>league (distance)</i>	sacrificar, <i>to sacrifice.</i>
locucion, <i>expression.</i>	sucedido, <i>happened.</i>
relacion, <i>narration.</i>	traido, <i>brought.</i>
suerte, <i>lot.</i>	usar, <i>to use.</i>
á menudo, <i>often.</i>	verdaderamente, <i>really.</i>
andar, <i>to go.</i>	vestido, <i>dressed.</i>

EXERCISE XI.

1. Más está para dormir, que para escuchar á nadie. 2. Nunca había (*had*) leído que ninguno lo hubiese (*had*) traído (el dinero). 3. ¿Ha visto V. á alguno de mis hijos? Algunos niños están in mi

huerta. 4. Unos cantan y otros lloran ; no me agradan ni unos ni otros ; uno(s) y otro(s) son infelices. 5. No tengo ni una camisa que ponerme, ni un cuarto (para) con que comprarla. 6. Cada uno de estos libros tiene seiscientas páginas. 7. La cosa ha pasado todo al revés de lo que se cuenta (*relate*). 8. Aunque es soldado (*or* con ser soldado), no ha manifestado mucho valor. 9. Algo ha sucedido que ignoramos (*we are ignorant of*) ; pero nadie está aquí para explicarnoslo. 10. El apetito ciego ; á cuántos precipita (*hasten*), que por lograr un nada, un todo sacrifican ! 11. ¡ Qué de cosas has (*thou hast*) ensartado, unas en otras ! me ha dicho mi padre. 12. Fulano le dice á zutano, que mengano habla mal de sus vecinos. 13. Para hablar una lengua, no hay (*there is*) cosa como saber los pronombres. 14. Tal es, señores, la relacion de mi funesta historia, de mis hazañas tales cuales son. 15. La filosofía de él es poco útil en sí misma, porque todo lo da á la especulacion y nada á la experiencia. 16. En el famoso romance de Cervantes, Don Quijote tiene por señora á una tal Dulcinea de Toboso. 17. Cuántas leguas tenemos que andar todavía ? No lo sé (no sé cuantas). 18. Poco importa (*imports*) es una locucion que se usa muy á menudo por muchos.

THEME XI.

1. We do not require much to be really and always happy. 2. If we are attentive and diligent, little or nothing can (*puede*) prevent our doing our duty. 3. I cannot¹ write with any of these pens, and I have no

¹ Poder, § 196.

others. 4. Neither the one nor the other of the men knows (**sabe**) what he is doing (**hace**). 5. Does any one know a certain man, dressed in black, who passes here every morning? 6. No one can change iron into gold, nor vice into virtue. 7. All say (**dicen**) that both have the same features and the same tone of voice. 8. Each of the brothers goes every day in summer to bathe in the ocean. 9. Such as my father and my mother had (**habían**) described her to me, such I find her. 10. One ought not to think too much of the most frivolous things that it is as important (**importa**) to be ignorant of as to know (them). 11. I have asked the merchant how much I owe him, but I have not yet received my bill. 12. Whosoever writes (**escriba**) to me on this subject will lose (**perderá**) his time and his efforts. 13. It is said that such a knight has achieved such and such an adventure with the aid of such a one, his squire. 14. No one is content with his lot ; each one desires to be happier. 15. I know one, said (**decía**) the child, who is more beautiful than that lady—my mother. 16. Have you some books in your trunk to read during the summer? Yes, I have several.

LESSON XII.

VERB-FORMS.

139. There are three different forms of inflection (called conjugation) in Spanish, to which all verbs, irregular as well as regular, belong. They are dis-

tinguished by the ending of the infinitive. Those ending in **ar** (as **hablar**) are of the first; those in **er** (as **temer**) of the second; those in **ir** (as **recibir**) of the third conjugation.

140. There are five principal parts of a Spanish verb, from which the other parts may be obtained by certain regular changes (this applies in general to irregular as well as regular verbs; since the irregularities generally occur in the principal parts, and not in the parts obtained from them). The names of the five principal and their obtained parts are :

I.	II.	III.
INFINITIVE.	PRES. PART. ¹	PAST PART.
(<i>Derived Parts.</i>)	(<i>No derived parts.</i>)	(<i>Derived Parts.</i>)
Imperfect Indic.	Generally like Pres.;	Compound tenses.
Future Indic.	sometimes like Pret.,	
Conditional.	or unlike both.	
IV.	V.	
PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRETERITE INDICATIVE.	
(<i>Derived Parts.</i>)	(<i>Derived Parts.</i>)	
Present Subjunctive.	1st Imperfect Subjunctive.	
Imperative.	2d Imperfect Subjunctive.	
	Future Subjunctive.	

141. Taking now the regular verb **hablar**, of the first conjugation, and placing the forms as indicated in § 140, we have the following schedule :

hablar	habl-ando	habl-ado	habl-o	habl-é
hablaba		he hablado	habl-e	habl-ara
hablar-é		etc.	habl-a	habl-ase
hablar-ía				habl-are

All regular verbs in **ar** are conjugated as **hablar**.

¹ Really not Pres. Part., but GERUND; called "Pres. Part.," because that name is more familiar.

142. The general meaning of these forms is as follows :

I.	II.	III.
To speak	Speaking	Spoken
I was speaking		I have spoken
I shall speak		etc.
I would speak		
IV.	V.	
I speak	I spoke	
I may speak	I might speak	
Speak (thou)	I might speak	
	I should speak	

143. By observing the schedule of § 141 (and those of §§ 145 and 147) it will be seen that by dropping the termination of the infinitive and adding *aba* (or *ia*) we have the imperfect indicative ; that by adding *é* to the infinitive form we have the future indicative ; and by adding *ia* to the infinitive we have the conditional. The compound tenses are formed by adding the past participle to the various forms of *haber*. By changing *o* of the present indicative into *e* (or *a*) we get present subjunctive ; and by changing *o* into *a* (or *e*) we get present imperative. By changing *é* (or *í*) of the preterite to *ara* or *ase* (or *iera* or *iese*) we get first and second imperfect subjunctive ; and by changing the *é* (or *í*) into *are* (or *iere*) we get the future indicative. The *é* of the future indicative and the *ia* of conditional stand respectively for *he*, *I have*, and *había*, *I had*.

144. The following is a conjugation in full of the verb *hablar*, *to speak* :

FIRST CONJUGATION.

habl-ar	hablando	hablado ¹	habl-o	habl-é	
-aba			-as	-aste	
-abas			-a	-ó	
-aba			-amos	-ámos	
-ábamos			-ais	-ásteis	
-ábais			-an	-aron	
-aban					
hablar-é			habl-e	habl-ara,	-ase
-ás			-es	-aras,	-ases
-á			-e	-ara,	-ase
-émos			-emos	-áramos,	-ásemos
-éis			-eis	-árais,	-áseis
-án			-en	-aran	-asen
hablar-ía			— ²	habl-are	
-ías			habl-a (<i>thou</i>)	-ares	
-ía			habl-e V.	-are	
-íamos			—	-áremos	
-íais			hablad (<i>ye</i>)	-áreis	
-ían			hablen VV.	-aren	

VOCABULARY XII.

el anillo, <i>ring</i> .	el viaje, <i>trip, voyage</i> .
auxilio, <i>help</i> .	verno, <i>son-in-law</i> .
correo, <i>post (office)</i> .	alma (f.), <i>soul</i> .
empleo, <i>place, employment</i> .	la atencion, <i>attention</i> .
estado, <i>state</i> .	bondad, <i>kindness</i> .
extranjero, <i>stranger, foreigner</i> .	escritura, <i>writing</i> .
huracan, <i>hurricane</i> .	espada, <i>sword</i> .
ingenio, <i>mind</i> .	estima, <i>esteem</i> .
órgano, <i>organ (tool)</i> .	hostilidad, <i>hostility</i> .
polvo, <i>dust</i> .	ignorancia, <i>ignorance</i> .
silencio, <i>silence</i> .	inocencia, <i>innocence</i> .

¹ By prefixing the various forms of *haber* we get compound tenses of *hablar*. For conjugation of *haber* see § 158.

² Other forms, if needed, are taken from present subjunctive. All forms taken from subjunctive when used negatively: *no hables*, etc.

la masa, <i>mass, rank.</i>	gustar, <i>to please.</i>
nube, <i>cloud.</i>	hacer, <i>to make, do.</i>
presencia, <i>presence.</i>	hasta, <i>until.</i>
prudencia, <i>prudence.</i>	levantar, <i>to raise.</i>
pureza, <i>purity.</i>	llevar, <i>to carry, to raise.</i>
rectitud, <i>rectitude.</i>	lograr, <i>to succeed, hit upon.</i>
acompañar, <i>to accompany.</i>	maduramente, <i>maturely.</i>
aconsejar, <i>to advise.</i>	mientras más, <i>the more.</i>
alzar (se), <i>to raise (itself).</i>	necesitar, <i>to need.</i>
anoche, <i>last night.</i>	obrar, <i>to work, act.</i>
apénas, <i>scarcely.</i>	pelear, <i>to fight.</i>
aprobar, <i>to approve.</i>	presentar, <i>to present.</i>
asegurar, <i>to assure.</i>	prestar, <i>to lend.</i>
aun, <i>even.</i>	procurado, <i>procured.</i>
bello, <i>beautiful.</i>	prometer, <i>to promise.</i>
buscar, <i>to look for.</i>	quando, <i>when, if.</i>
casi, <i>almost.</i>	recibir, <i>to receive.</i>
cultivar, <i>to cultivate.</i>	reír, <i>to laugh.</i>
desconfiar (de), <i>to distrust.</i>	regalar, <i>to present.</i>
diga V., <i>tell.</i>	remediar, <i>to remedy.</i>
Dios quiera, <i>God grant.</i>	salir, <i>to go out.</i>
durable, <i>durable.</i>	sin, <i>without.</i>
durar, <i>to last.</i>	sino, <i>except.</i>
empezar, <i>to begin.</i>	temer, <i>to fear.</i>
encontrar, <i>to meet.</i>	tratar, <i>to try.</i>
florecente, <i>flourishing.</i>	unido (-a), <i>united.</i>
fundado, <i>founded.</i>	vivir, <i>to live.</i>
furioso, <i>furious.</i>	

EXERCISE XII.

1. Mi hermano acompaña á mi padre en sus viajes.
 2. Los Árabes no peleaban como los Romanos, en masas compactas. 3. Apénas empezaron las hostilidades, se alzó un furioso huracan que levantó grandes nubes de polvo. 4. Él piensa (*thinks*) que V. le regalará el libro y no el reloj. 5. No, él pensaba que (yo) se lo presentaría, pero no puedo

hacerlo. 6. Llevando mi yerno una espada muy larga, todos se reían de él. 7. Ha hablado V. á su yerno? Le he hablado, y quiero hablarle otra vez. 8. He de esperar (esperaré) hasta que hable del asunto. 9. (a) Acompaña á tu hermana : no acompañaes á tus amigos esta tarde. (b) Acompañe V. á su hermana ; no acompañe V. á sus amigos esta tarde. 10. Su hermana de V. buscó el anillo anoche, pero no lo halló. 11. Aun cuando tratara (*or* tratase) de remediar el mal, no podría lograrlo. 12. Mi padre desea que estudie la lengua española, y á mí me gusta estudiarla. 13. ¿Aprobaba V. que esos muchachos me hablasen así, en su presencia? 14. Su padre de V. me ha dicho que si V. estudiare bien, le dará á V. un bonito reloj. 15. He visto á mi padre ; él deséaba que yo llevase esta carta al corréo. 16. Prometió darme el dinero que yo necesitara (necesitase). 17. ¿Sin el auxilio de la escritura, órgano de todas las ciencias, qué hubiera (*1st imperf. subj. of haber*) en el mundo sino ignorancia?

THEME XII.

1. I speak to men of my country. 2. Mr. Valdés has procured an excellent place for a son of Mrs. de Legarra. 3. The physician advised me not to go out (*saliese*) yesterday. 4. Tell' Mr. Joseph Mor de Fuentes, when you shall meet him, that I wish to write to his son, but I don't know where he lives. 5. My friend's teacher has assured me that if my friend is diligent and studies with attention, he will not find Spanish véry difficult. 6. I would esteem Mr. B. if he loved his wife more, if he treated her with more attention and kindness, and if he loved himself a

¹ See *decir*, § 206.

little less. 7. He promised to lend me all the books that he should buy. 8. Speak more softly, and let us study with more attention. 9. A state is not flourishing but by the purity of its laws. 10. Esteem is durable only when it is founded on virtue. 11. To speak little, to observe much, to think maturely, and act prudently, are almost certain proofs of innocence of soul, rectitude of mind, and purity of manners. 12. The more foreigners cultivate the Spanish language, the more beautiful they find it. 13. Silence is the safest [part] for him who distrusts himself. 14. God grant that the war may not last long.

LESSON XIII.

SECOND AND THIRD CONJUGATION.

145. Following the order indicated in § 140, and the general meaning (allowance being made for different verb) of § 142, the synopsis of **temer** (2d conjugation) is as follows :

tem-er	temiendo	temido	tem-o	temí
tem-ía		he tem-ido	tem-a	tem-iera
temer-é		etc.	tem-e	tem-iese
temer-ía				tem-iere

146. CONJUGATION IN FULL OF **temer**, *to fear* :

temer	tem-iendo	tem-ido ¹	tem-o	tem-í
tem-ía			-es	-iste
-ías			-e	-ió
-ía			-emos	-imos
-íamos			-eis	-ístis e
-íais			-en	-ieron
-ían				

¹ Compound tenses formed with **haber** as auxiliary.

temer-é	tem-a	tem-iera,	-iese
-ás	-as	-ieras,	-ieses
-á	-a	-iera,	-iese
émos	amos	-iéramos,	-iésemos
éis	-ais	-iérais,	-iéseis
-án	-an	-ieran	-iesen
temer-ía	—	tem-iere	
-ías	tem-e ¹	-ieres	
-ía	-a V	-iere	
-íamos	—	-iéremos	
-íais	tem-ed	-iéreis	
-ían	tem-an VV.	-ieren	

147. SYNOPSIS OF *recibir* (3d conjugation), *to receive* :

recibir	recib-iendo	recib-ido	recib-o	recib-í
recib-ía		he recibido	recib a	recib-iera
recibir-é		etc.	recib-e	recib-iese
recibir-ía				recib-iere

148. CONJUGATION IN FULL OF *recibir*, *to receive* :

recib-ir	recib-iendo	recib-ido	recib-o	recib-í
recib-ía			-es	-iste
-ías			-e	-ió
-ía			-imos	-ímos
-íamos			-ís	-ísteis
-íais			-en	-ieron
ían				
recibir-é		recib-a	recib-iera,	-iese
-ás		-as	-ieras,	-ieses
á		-a	-iera,	-iese
-émos		-amos	-iéramos,	-iésemos
-éis		-ais	-iérais,	-iéseis
-án		-an	-ieran,	-iesen
recibir-ía		—	recib-iere	
-ías		recib-e	-ieres	
-ía		-a V.	-iere	
-íamos		—	-iéremos	
-íais		recib-id	-iéreis	
-ían		-an VV.	-ieren	

¹ See note to imperative mood, § 144.

VOCABULARY XIII.

el café, <i>coffee.</i>	enfadar, <i>to vex.</i>
campo, <i>country, field.</i>	enseñar, <i>to teach.</i>
ejercicio, <i>exercise.</i>	enviar, <i>to send.</i>
juego, <i>game.</i>	esconder, <i>to hide.</i>
la destreza, <i>dexterity.</i>	interrumpir, <i>to interrupt.</i>
dificultad, <i>difficulty.</i>	largo (-a), <i>long, large.</i>
empresa, <i>undertaking.</i>	llamar, <i>to call.</i>
pasion, <i>passion.</i>	más vale, <i>it is better.</i>
pistola, <i>pistol.</i>	menester, <i>necessary.</i>
recompensa, <i>recompense.</i>	mentir, <i>to lie.</i>
venta, <i>sale.</i>	olvidar, <i>to forget.</i>
abrir, <i>to open.</i>	parecer, <i>to seem.</i>
ambiguo, <i>ambiguous.</i>	pasar, <i>to pass.</i>
arreglar, <i>to put in order.</i>	perder, <i>to lose.</i>
atacar, <i>to attack.</i>	prescribir, <i>to prescribe.</i>
aumentar, <i>to augment.</i>	reflexionar, <i>to reflect.</i>
beber, <i>to drink.</i>	reñir, <i>to scold.</i>
combatir, <i>to combat.</i>	retirar, <i>to withdraw.</i>
comer, <i>to eat.</i>	saber, <i>to know.</i>
consistir, <i>to consist.</i>	suplicar, <i>to beg.</i>
con tal que, <i>provided that.</i>	tomar, <i>to take.</i>
decaer, <i>to diminish.</i>	vehementemente, <i>with force.</i>
descubrir, <i>to discover.</i>	vencer, <i>to conquer.</i>
desistir, <i>to desist.</i>	ya, <i>already.</i>
despues (de), <i>after.</i>	

EXERCISE XIII.

1. El pobre Felipe perdió todo su dinero en aquella especulacion. 2. Los Romanos vencieron á todas las naciones del mundo. 3. Cuando vivíamos en el campo estudiábamos mucho. 4. Me retiré reflexionando en estas palabras, que no eran ambiguas. 5. Hoy recibirémos todo el café que necesitamos ó yo beberé agua. 6. Tome V. un coche, si V. no quiere ir á pié esta mañana. 7. No me hable V. de ese

asunto, estoy enfadado con V. 8. El maestro desea mucho que aprendamos la lengua española. 9. Era menester que gastásemos mucho dinero para arreglar la casa. 10. Mi maestro quería que yo aprendiese una lección más larga. 11. Colon prometió una recompensa al primero que descubriera la tierra. 12. Yo aprendería el francés, si V. me lo enseñara. 13. No olvidaremos nada de lo que la amistad prescribiere. 14. Si encontrare V. á su padre mañana, no olvide lo que le he dicho. 15. Vengo (*I come*) á ver si ha llegado de la Habana el señor Alvarez. 16. La dificultad consiste en saber donde hallar al señor Romero. 17. ¿Qué hora es? No puedo decirselo, porque no lo sé. 18. Temiendo (él) que le atacasen llevó sus pistolas, *or*, Por temer (él) que le atacasen llevó sus pistolas.

THEME XIII.

1. He allowed his children games of exercise and dexterity. 2. I bought yesterday two dozen(s) (of) pears, and we have eaten them already. 3. Speak more softly; you have already interrupted me twice. 4. Open the door for my father; he has already knocked three times. 5. I fear that my father and mother may not receive your letter. 6. Although he might read much, he would learn but little. 7. If he should pass (by here), I would call him. 8. You augment your fortune, and mine diminishes from day to day. 9. We shall hide him in order that the soldiers may not discover him. 10. We shall live happy after combating our passions. 11. You know how to lie; it is better to tell the truth. 12. Do you wish that

I (may) open the door? Yes; but do not scold.¹
 13. He would permit the sale, provided you would receive the money. 14. He begged him with force that he would desist from that undertaking. 15. You will send what shall seem (*seems, parezca*) best to you.

LESSON XIV.

EUPHONIC CHANGES IN REGULAR VERBS.

149. All verbs ending in **car**, **gar**, or **zar** always change **c**, **g**, and **z** into **qu**, **gu**, and **c**, respectively, before **e** (this occurs in the first person singular of the preterite indicative; in the present subjunctive throughout; and in subjunctive used as imperative); and verbs in **guar** take diæresis before **e** (in same position): as, **tocar**, *to touch*; **pagar**, *to pay*; **avanzar**, *to advance*; **aguar**, *to mix with water*.

INFINITIVE,	tocar	pagar	avanzar	aguar
PRETERITE,	toqué	pagué	avancé	agüé
PRES. SUBJ.,	toque	pague	avance	agüe
SUBJ. FOR IMP.,	toque	pague	avance	agüe

150. When the **c** of verbs ending in **cer** or **cir** is preceded by a consonant and would be followed by **a** or **o**, it is changed into **z**; but if a vowel² precedes **c**, **z** is inserted before it (**c**) in like positions; this occurs in first person singular, present indicative; in present subjunctive throughout, and in subjunctive

¹ *Reñir*, see *pedir*, § 204.

² For *cocer* and *hacer* and their compounds, see §§ 189, 190.

used for imperative : as, **vencer**, *to conquer* ; **resarcir**, *to compensate* ; **ofrecer**, *to offer* ; **relucir**, *to glitter*.

INFINITIVE,	vencer	resarcir	ofrecer	relucir
PRES. IND.,	venzo	resarzo	ofrezco	reluzco
PRES. SUB.,	venza	resarza	ofrezca	reluzca
SUB. FOR IMP.,	venza	resarza	ofrezca	reluzca

EXCEPTIONS : **empecer** (*offend*) and **mecer** (*stir*) follow rule for **cer** preceded by consonant.

151. Verbs ending in **ger** or **gir** change **g** into **j** before **a** or **o** ; those ending in **guir** drop **u** before **a** or **o** ; and those ending in **quir** also change **qu** to **c** before **a** or **o**.

This applies to same moods, etc., as in § 150 : as, **escoger**, *to choose*, **escojo**, etc. ; **dirigir**, *to direct*, **dirijo**, etc. ; **distinguir**, *to distinguish*, **distingo**, etc. ; **delinquir**, *to transgress*, **delinco**, etc.

152. Verbs having the double consonants **ch**, **ll**, or **ñ** just before the infinitive ending, regularly lose **i** of the diphthong **ie** and **io** when they would occur in conjugation (which would be in pres. part. ; third sing. and plur. of pret. ind. ; imperfects and future subj.) : as, **bullir** (*to boil*), **bullendo**, etc.

153. The **i** of accented¹ verbal terminations, when following a vowel, is changed to **y** : as, **cre-er**, *to believe*, **creyendo**, **creyó**, **cre-yera**, etc. ; **caer**, *to fall*, **cayendo**, **ca-yó**, **cayese**, etc. ; **destruir**, *to destroy*, **destruyendo**, **destruyó**, **destruyera**, etc. And those verbs ending in **uir** change **i** to **y**¹ before **a**, **e**, **o** : as, **atribuir**, *to attribute*, **atribuyo**, **atribuyes**, etc.

¹ But not when the graphic accent is on the **i**, hence not in the imperfect indicative : as, **leía**, etc., from **leer**, *to read*.

VOCABULARY XIV.

el aprieto, <i>difficulty.</i>	creer, <i>to believe.</i>
beneficio, <i>benefit, favor.</i>	dejar, <i>to let, allow.</i>
camino, <i>way, road.</i>	delinquir, <i>to transgress.</i>
heno, <i>hay.</i>	dirigir, <i>to direct.</i>
importe, <i>amount.</i>	distinguir, <i>to distinguish.</i>
jabalí, <i>wild boar.</i>	empecer, <i>to offend.</i>
medio, <i>means.</i>	escoger, <i>to choose.</i>
memorial, <i>memorandum.</i>	esparcir, <i>to scatter.</i>
piano, <i>piano.</i>	frecuentar, <i>to frequent.</i>
retrato, <i>portrait.</i>	gozar, <i>to enjoy.</i>
rigor, <i>rigor.</i>	hácia, <i>towards.</i>
la compañía, <i>company.</i>	honrar, <i>to honor.</i>
deuda, <i>debt.</i>	huir, <i>to escape, fly.</i>
factura, <i>invoice.</i>	instruir, <i>to instruct.</i>
fatiga, <i>fatigue.</i>	llegar, <i>to arrive.</i>
naranja, <i>orange.</i>	matar, <i>to kill.</i>
paja, <i>straw.</i>	mecer, <i>to agitate.</i>
red, <i>net.</i>	merecer, <i>to merit.</i>
tranquilidad, <i>tranquillity.</i>	pagar, <i>to pay.</i>
acabar, <i>to finish.</i>	partir, <i>to depart.</i>
acoger, <i>to receive.</i>	posible, <i>possible.</i>
aguar, <i>to mix with water.</i>	preciso, <i>necessary.</i>
alegrar, <i>to please.</i>	preguntar, <i>to ask.</i>
aprovechar (se), <i>to take advantage.</i>	preparar, <i>to prepare.</i>
atentamente, <i>attentively.</i>	producir, <i>to produce.</i>
avanzar, <i>to advance.</i>	proteger, <i>to protect.</i>
cargar, <i>to charge.</i>	robar, <i>to rob.</i>
cazar, <i>to hunt, chase.</i>	seguir, <i>to follow.</i>
coger, <i>to catch.</i>	sufrir, <i>to suffer.</i>
comprender, <i>to comprehend.</i>	tocar, <i>to touch, play.</i>
consentir (en), <i>to consent.</i>	

EXERCISE XIV.

1. Expliquemos eso, porque él desea comprenderlo.
2. Cárgueme V. el importe de esta factura, no tengo

el dinero. 3. Háblenos V. de su viaje; le escucharemos á V. con atencion. 4. Si V. frecuenta á la gente honrada V. será honrado. 5. El creará honrarle á V. acogiéndole como V. lo merezca. 6. No he aprendido á servirme bien de las redes, y no cojo muchos pájaros. 7. No protejo á los holgazanes. 8. Quando uno ha vivido como hombre honrado, goza una verdadero tranquilidad. 9. ¡ Que delinca! si quiere ser castigado con rigor. 10. Miéntas que esparzo este heno, el esparcirá la paja para V. 11. El padre del muchacho no cree que llegue esta mañana. 12. Si es verdad que su padre llegue (*or* llega) mañana, será menester prepararle un cuarto. 13. Él se aprovecha del consejo de su padre, y huye de la mala compañía. 14. Mándeme V. su memorial, lo leeré atentamente. 15. Es preciso que yo pregunte por los niños. 16. Despues de haber seguido su camino hácia Paris, tomó el de Leon.

THEME XIV.

1. I played the piano a little to please (gladden) the ladies. 2. He does not pay his debts; he wishes that others may pay them. 3. You are looking for your brother, but you will not find him. 4. I fear that we may not arrive in time for dinner. 5. I wish that you conquer your enemies by your favors. 6. I shall not consent to allow you to depart if you do not take something. 7. I do not know when I shall finish the portrait of your child. 8. I do not think that Portugal produces the best oranges. 9. Send me your son if you wish that I instruct (*subj.*) him. 10. I choose this coat, which seems to me the best of all.

11. It is possible that the letters may come to-day.
 12. Don Juan Morales of Madrid is the best man that I know. 13. It is necessary that you seek the means of getting out of the difficulty. 14. I chased a wild boar yesterday, and suffered great fatigue. 15. After having robbed his master, he killed him. 16. I arrived in London in the year 1873.

LESSON XV.

THE COMPOUND TENSES AND *haber, to have.*

154. Except in the passive voice, the compound tenses of all verbs are formed with *haber*,¹ *to have*: as, *ha aprendido, he has learned*; *ha llegado, he has (is) come.*

155. (a) When the auxiliary *to have* (or *to be*, in the sense of *is to, must*) precedes an infinitive, it is rendered by *haber de* or *tener que, deber* or *deber de*: as, *he de decirle, tengo que decirle.* (b) When *to have* is not an auxiliary, it is rendered by *tener*: as, *tengo una pluma, tengo la satisfaccion de verla.*

(c) Note following sentence: *este hecho hubo de comprometer el éxito de la expedicion, this fact was on the point of, etc.*
 (d) *Haber* in compounds of present tense is better not separated from the participle: *Ha recibido V.?* (not *ha V. recibido?*). But this is allowable in 2d sing. and 1st and 2d persons plural: as, *habeis ido vosotros?* or *habeis vosotros ido?*

156. (a) *Haber*² is used impersonally (3d person sing.) and means *there is, there are, there were, etc.*:

¹ See § 234 (c).

² So used it takes *que* with following infinitive: as, *no hay que temer, there is nothing to fear.*

as, hay grandes autores en España. (b) Haber (used impersonally) often means *since, ago, how far, etc.* : as, hay cinco años que murió (*died*), cuánto hay de aquí á la ciudad? (c) Haber (used impersonally) often denotes a state which continues : as, hay dos años que está malo.

157. SYNOPSIS OF haber, to have (irregular verb) :

haber	hab-iendo ¹	hab-ido	he	hub e
había		he habido	haya	hub iera
habr é		etc.	—	hub iese
habr-ía				hub iere

158. haber hab-iendo hab-ido he hub e

hab ía	Comp'd of Pres. ²	he habido	has	-iste
-ías	" Imp	había habido	ha	-o
-ía	" Pret	hub e habido	hemos	-imos
-íamos	" Fut.	habr é habido	habeis	-ísteis
-íais	" Cond.	habr ía habido	han	-ieron
-ían	" Prs. Sb.	hay a habido		
	C'p'd of 1. Imp.	hub iera habido	hay a hub iera,	-iese
habr-é	" 2. Imp.'	-iese habido	-as -ieras,	-ieses
-ás	" Ft. Sub.	-iere habido	-a -iera,	-iese
-á			-ámos -iéramos,	-iésemos
-émos			-áis -iérais,	-iéseis
-éis			-an -ieran,	-iesen
-án				
habr ía		(See note 3.)	hub iere	
-ías			-ieres	
-ía			-iere	
-íamos			-iéremos	
-íais			-iéreis	
-ían			-ieren	

¹ Used occasionally with past part. of other verbs : as, habiendo escrito, *having written*.

² These compound tenses are found in all verbs, and each one is developed through different persons and numbers of haber.

³ Imperative wanting, although habe and habed are sometimes given.

159. Haber¹ conjugated as impersonal verb (3d sing.):

hab-er	habi-endo	hab-ido	hay ²	hubo
hab-ía	Comp. of Pres. Ind.	ha habido	haya	hub iera
habr-á	“	Imp. había habido	haya	hub-iese
habr-ía	“	Pret. hub habido		hub-iere
	“	Fut. habrá habido		
	“	Cond. habría habido		
	“	Pres. Sub. haya habido		
Comp'd of 1.	Imp Sub.	hubiera habido		
“	2. Imp. Sub.	hubiese habido		
“	Fut. Sub.	hubiere habido		

VOCABULARY XV.

el amo, <i>master.</i>	breve, <i>short, brief.</i>
éxito, <i>result.</i>	comprometer, <i>to compromise.</i>
general, <i>general.</i>	concluir, <i>to finish.</i>
gobierno, <i>government.</i>	considerar, <i>to consider.</i>
influjo, <i>influence.</i>	deber, <i>to be obliged.</i>
modo, <i>mode, manner.</i>	despedir, <i>to dismiss.</i>
piloto, <i>pilot.</i>	entregar, <i>to abandon (to).</i>
pleito, <i>dispute, lawsuit.</i>	faltar, <i>to fail.</i>
sustento, <i>sustenance.</i>	gris, <i>gray.</i>
trigo, <i>wheat.</i>	heredar, <i>to inherit.</i>
la armonía, <i>harmony.</i>	infeliz, <i>unhappy.</i>
carestía, <i>famine.</i>	informar, <i>to inform.</i>
cosecha, <i>harvest.</i>	nadar, <i>to swim.</i>
enfermedad, <i>disease.</i>	podido (poder), <i>been able.</i>
(el) hambre (f.), <i>hunger.</i>	pronto, <i>soon.</i>
noticia, <i>news.</i>	saciar, <i>to satisfy.</i>
paz, <i>peace</i>	trocar, <i>to exchange.</i>
riqueza, <i>wealth.</i>	

¹ It will be noticed that haber used impersonally is the same as third person of haber used personally, except in the present indicative and imperative.

² Hay = ha with Latin *ibi* = *y*, *there*.

EXERCISE XV.

1. V. tiene el mismo modo de ver que yo. 2. Hace diez años y seis meses que está en Inglaterra. 3. Ha habido una gran batalla en el sud de África. 4. ¿Cuándo habrá acabado V. su lección? La habré acabado en una hora. 5. ¿Quién ha heredado la fortuna del general? No ha dejado ninguna. 6. ¿Había hablado V. á este hombre? Yo le había hablado dos ó tres veces. 7. He de hacerme un vestido del paño gris ó negro. 8. Aun cuando hubiera (*or* hubiese) mayor armonía entre los hombres habría siempre pleitos. 9. Trueca (*he exchanges*) los breves males con (*or* por) los que han de durar para siempre. 10. Él ha de saber que su padre está malo; le informaré. 11. El caballo está en campo, donde no le ha de faltar el sustento. 12. ¿Qué hay que hacer? Qué había de hacer yo? 13. Tal fué (*was*) su conducta, que hube de despedirle de mi servicio. 14. Si las riquezas hubieran (*or* hubiesen) podido saciarme, las habría amado. 15. Si hay (*or* hubiere) noticias de nuestro país, escríbame V. 16. Envieme V. los libros que haya (*or* hubiere) en mi cuarto. 17. Cuando hubiere concluido su retrato de V. se lo llevaré á V.

THEME XV.

1. Although he has been ill some time (it is some time that he is ill), he is not an infirm man. 2. Shall you have finished your work this evening? 3. I have to make soon a long voyage on the ocean (*por la mar*). 4. Even though there were peace, there would always

¹ From *hacer* used as *haber*, see § 156 (c).

be laws and governments. 5. Riches and poverty have a great influence over men. 6. If there were (should have) less idlers, there would be less unhappiness. 7. If I must (*he de*) make you a faithful picture of my master, I must tell you, etc. 8. Considering that hunger had to produce its effect, I abandoned myself to my lot. 9. We are to work this morning, and we are to read this evening. 10. The pilot knows very well what is to be done. 11. My brother and my cousin learned to swim long ago. 12. If there had been a good harvest of wheat, there would not have been a famine. 13. If you had arrived sooner you would have dined with us. 14. If there is (*or shall be*) disease in the ship, abandon it. 15. Send me the letters that there are (*or there may be*) in my trunk. 16. When I shall have finished my letter, I shall take it to the post.

LESSON XVI.

PASSIVE VOICE,¹ *ser* AND *estar* (see § 73).

160. The proper passive voice of a verb in Spanish is found by joining its past participle (which must agree with its subject in gender and number) to the auxiliary *ser*:² **Esta señora es amada y estimada de todos los que la conocen.**

¹ For the reflexive verb used as a passive, see § 170.

² SYNOPSIS OF *ser alabado* :

<i>ser alabado</i> (a)	<i>siendo alabado</i> (-a)	(<i>sido</i>) <i>alabado</i> (-a)
<i>era alabado</i>		COMP OF PRES. IND.
<i>ser é alabado</i>		he <i>sido alabado</i> (-a)
<i>ser ía alabado</i>		has <i>sido alabado</i>
		ha <i>sido alabado</i>

161. When the verb expresses what is accidental or temporary, its past participle (which is considered as an adjective and must agree with the subject in gender and number) is joined to the verb **estar** (sometimes even to **andar**, **ir**, **quedar**, etc.): **as, está sentado, he is seated**; **como muchas veces queda referido.**

162. **Estar** (never **ser**) is used with the present participle for the progressive active form: **as, mi padre está leyendo (reading) en su cuarto; estuvo (he was) jugando (playing) todo el día.**

163. With passive verbs *by*, denoting agency, is generally expressed by **por**; but when the verb expresses an intransitive action or feeling, **de** is generally used: **as, los ladrones son perseguidos (pursued) por el alguacil, but una tempestad seguida de calma; la sabiduría es alabada de (or por) todos.**

164. SYNOPSIS OF ser:

ser	siendo	sido	soy	fuí
era		he sido	sea	fu-era
ser-é		etc.	sé	fu-ese
ser-ía				fu-ere

165. CONJUGATION OF ser:

ser	siendo	sido	soy	fuí
era	Comp. of Pres. Ind.	he sido	eres	fuiste
eras		has sido	es	fué
era		ha sido	somos	fuimos
éramos		hemos sido	sois	fuísteis
érais		habeis sido	son	fueron
eran		han sido		

hemos sido alabado
habeis sido alabado
han sido alabado

soy alabado (-a)
sea alabado
sé alabado

fuí alabado (-a)
fuera alabado
fuese alabado
fuere alabado

ser-é	Comp. of Imp. Ind.	hab-ía	sido	sea	fu-era,	-ese
-ás		-ías	sido	seas	-eras,	-eses
-á		-ía	sido	sea	-era,	-ese
-émos		-íamos	sido	seamos	-éramos,	-ésemos
-éis		-íais	sido	seáis	-érais,	-éseis
-án		-ían	sido	sean	-eran,	-esen
ser-ía		etc.		—	fu-ere	
-ías				sé	-eres	
-ía				sea V.	-ere	
-íamos				—	-éremos	
-íais				sed	-éreis	
-ían				sean VV.	-eren	

166. SYNOPSIS OF *estar* :

est-ar	estando	estado	estoy	estuve
est-aba		he estado	esté	estuv-iera
estar-é		etc.	está	estuv-iese
estar-ía				estuv-iere

167. CONJUGATION OF *estar* :

estar	est-ando	estado	estoy	estuve	
est-aba		he estado	-ás	-iste	
-abas		has estado	-á	-o	
-aba		ha estado	-amos	-imos	
-ábamos		hemos estado	-ais	-ísteis	
-ábais		habeis estado	-án	-ieron	
-aban		han estado			
estar-é		etc.	esté	estuv-iera,	-iese
-ás			-és	-ieras,	-ieses
-á			-é	-iera,	-iese
-émos			-emos	-iéramos,	-iésemos
-éis			-eis	-iérais,	-iéseis
-án			-én	-ieran,	-iesen
estar-ía			—	estuv-iere	
-ías			está (<i>be thou</i>)	-ieres	
-ía			esté V.	-iere	
-íamos			—	-iéremos	
-íais			estad	-iéreis	
-ían			estén VV.	-ieren	

VOCABULARY XVI.

el baile, <i>ball (party)</i> .	allí, <i>there</i> .
banquero, <i>banker</i> .	alto, <i>high</i> .
comercio, <i>commerce</i> .	casar, <i>to marry</i> .
convite, <i>invitation</i> .	colmar, <i>to overwhelm</i> .
derecho, <i>right</i> .	comprobar, <i>to prove</i> .
diputado, <i>deputy</i> .	conquistar, <i>to conquer</i> .
dueño, <i>owner</i> .	convidar, <i>to invite</i> .
espacio, (<i>space</i>) <i>time</i> .	desgraciado, <i>unfortunate</i> .
fruto, <i>fruit (on tree)</i> .	desmayado, <i>fainted</i> .
ladron, <i>robber</i> .	desordenado, <i>lawless</i> .
periódico, <i>newspaper</i> .	dócil, <i>tractable</i> .
rayo, <i>flash (of lightning)</i> .	elegir, <i>to elect</i> .
reino, <i>kingdom</i> .	favorecido, <i>favoured</i> .
la ambicion, <i>ambition</i> .	incendiar, <i>to set fire to</i> .
colocacion, <i>situation</i> .	ir, <i>to go</i> .
condicion, <i>condition</i> .	presente, <i>present</i> .
desigualdad, <i>inequality</i> .	prevenir, <i>to inform</i> .
igualdad, <i>equality</i> .	pródigo, <i>prodigal</i> .
infancia, <i>childhood</i> .	quedar, <i>to remain</i> .
levita, <i>frock-coat</i> .	referir, <i>to report</i> .
licencia, <i>license</i> .	remendar, <i>to mend</i> .
mar, <i>sea</i> .	representar, <i>to represent</i> .
muerte, <i>death</i> .	reprimir, <i>to repress</i> .
prosperidad, <i>prosperity</i> .	restablecer, <i>to re-establish</i> .
revolucion, <i>revolution</i> .	saludable, <i>salutary</i> .
tempestad, <i>storm</i> .	satisfecho, <i>satisfied</i> .
abrigar, <i>to shelter</i> .	sosegado, <i>quiet</i> .
aceptar, <i>to accept</i> .	suceder, <i>to happen</i> .
agitar, <i>to agitate</i> .	supuesto, <i>granted</i> .
agrio, <i>sour</i> .	temprano, <i>early</i> .
alabar, <i>to praise</i> .	

EXERCISE XVI.

1. Las ciencias han sido siempre favorecidas por los buenos gobiernos. 2. No engañamos á nadie, pero somos engañados muy á menudo. 3. La licencia fué

reprimida y la paz restablecida en el país. 4. Estoy seguro que la carta no ha sido escrita (*written*) por él. 5. Ha quedado (*it has been*) comprobado que eso no es verdad. 6. Si yo hubiera (*or* hubiese) sido convidado al baile habría aceptado el convite. 7. Esta carta es para V., la hacienda es de ella (*hers*), pero el dinero es mio. 8. Tu hermano de V. está aquí; qué está haciendo? Está durmiendo (*sleeping*). 9. Señores, son hombres valientes los que allí están presentes. 10. Mi amigo es casado; mi sobrino está (*lives*) casado en Portugal. 11. Sucedióle lo que queda referido, pero estaba prevenido. 12. Estando él en alta mar, un rayó incendió el buque. 13. Dónde ha estado V.? He estado escribiendo en casa. 14. La ambicion desordenada es la que tantas revoluciones produce. 15. Fué pequeño espacio el en que estuvo Transila desmayada (Cervantes). 16. Quiera Dios, que sus años de V. sean colmados de toda prosperidad. 17. Es temprano, pero mi criado está por (*in favor of*) (*or* para, *is ready*) salir.

THEME XVI.

1. My friend has been elected deputy of his city. 2. The estate has been sold since the death of the owner. 3. These things were (have been) selected by my brother when he was (*estaba*) in Paris. 4. This comedy has been played twice in the large theatre. 5. The beautiful house of the banker will be sold this week. 6. This fruit is sour (by nature), is sour (by accident); the tree is tall, the fruit is high. 7. He was much agitated, but he is much more quiet now. 8. He is very teachable, and is satisfied with his situation. 9. I am not reading the newspaper; I

am mending my coat. 10. Whom are you seeking? I am looking for my brother. 11. This old house is that which sheltered our childhood. 12. "These are not days of faith in which we live," said Alcalá Galiano. 13. The fortresses of the whole kingdom are conquered. 14. Granted the equality of rights, the inequality of conditions has salutary effects. 15. If I had not been so unfortunate, I would already have abandoned commerce. 16. If you were not so prodigal, you would be richer.

LESSON XVII.

REFLEXIVE VERBS AND **tener**.

168. While many Spanish verbs are used only reflexively, all transitive verbs (having direct or indirect object) and many intransitive ones (indirect object) may be used reflexively: as, **maravillar**, **maravillarse**, **alabar** and **alabarse**, **atribuir** and **atribuirse** (*to attribute to him-, her-, itself or themselves*), **dormir** (*to sleep*), **dormirse** (*to fall asleep*). **Yo me comeré dos panes**; **yo me olvido de la leccion**, or better, **yo olvido la leccion**; **te apropiaste á tí ó para tí la capa**, *you appropriated the cloak to or for yourself*.

169. (a) For the position of subject pronoun see § 155 (d). (b) For the form and position of the object pronoun see Lesson VII, and note the following phrases. **yo me alegre**, **V. se ha alegrado**, or **se ha alegrado V.**; **¿se ha alegrado V.?**; **nosotros no nos hemos alegrado**; **¿no nos hemos alegrado nosotros?**

170. The reflexive¹ verb, whether personal or im-

¹ **Se** followed by other conjunctive pronouns, and third person singular of the verb, sometimes takes the place of reflexive

personal, is often used for the passive voice : as, *eso no se puede hacer*, or *eso no puede hacerse, se dice*.

171. The reflexive verb is often used reciprocally : as, *saludáronse cortesmente, they greeted each other politely*.

172. (a) For uses of *tener*, see § 155 (a) and (b). (b) When in English the verb *to be* precedes adjectives denoting one's feelings, physical or moral, as *hungry, cold, afraid, ashamed*, etc., *tener* is to be used : as, *tengo sueño, frío, calor, hambre, sed, razón, miedo y vergüenza*. (c) The same verb is used in reference to one's age : as, *¿Qué edad tiene? Tengo cincuenta años de edad*. (d) If a noun expressing sentiment or duty comes between *tengo* and the following infinitive, *de* precedes the infinitive : as, *tuvo la satisfacción de verla*. (e) *What is the matter with you?*, etc., *¿que tiene V?*, etc. *Nothing is the matter with me*, etc., *no tengo nada*, etc.

173. SYNOPSIS OF REFLEXIVE VERB *alegrarse, to rejoice* :

alegrarse	alegrándose	alegrado (se)	me alegr-o	me alegr-é
me alegr-aba		me he alegrado	me alegr-e	me alegr-ara
me alegrar-é		etc.	alégrate	me alegr-ase
me alegrar-ía				me alegr-are

173. (a) CONJUGATION OF REFLEXIVE VERB *alegrarse, to rejoice* :

me alegr-aba	alegrándose	alegrádo(se)	me alegro	me alegr-é
te -abas		me he alegrádo	te -as	te -aste
se -aba		te has alegrádo	se -a	se -ó
(V. se -aba)		se ha alegrádo	etc.	etc.
nos -ábamos		etc.		
os -ábais				me alegr-ara
se -aban				te -aras
(VV. se -aban)				se -ara
				etc. etc.

proper, and sometimes of the passive : *parece que se te ha ido de las mientes, it appears that it has gone out of your mind ; se me dice, I am told*.

174. SYNOPSIS OF tener (irregular verb), *to hold, to have*:

ten-er	ten-iendo	ten-ido	tengo	<u>tuv-e</u>
ten-ía		he ten-ido	<u>teng-a</u>	<u>tuv-iera</u>
<u>tendr-é</u>		etc.	ten	<u>tuv-iese</u>
<u>tendr-ía</u>				<u>tuv-iere</u>

175. CONJUGATION OF tener, *to hold, to have*:

ten-er	ten-iendo	ten-ido	tengo	tuv-e
ten-ía		he ten-ido	tienes	-iste
-ías		etc.	tiene	-o
-ía			tenemos	-imos
-íamos			teneis	-isteis
-íais			tienen	-ieron
-ían			teng-a	tuv-iera, -iese.
tendr-é			etc.	etc.
etc.			—	tuv-iere
tendr-ía			ten	etc.
etc.			teng-a V.	
			—	
			tened	
			tengan VV.	

10 verbos irreg. en 1.ª y 2.ª conj. que se conjugan como tener.

VOCABULARY XVII.

el cuello, <i>collar.</i>	la razon, <i>reason (right).</i>
dedo, <i>finger.</i>	rodilla, <i>knee.</i>
miedo, <i>fear.</i>	sed, <i>thirst.</i>
motivo, <i>reason.</i>	vergüenza, <i>shame.</i>
la amistad, <i>friendship.</i>	acostar (-se), <i>to go to bed.</i>
confianza, <i>confidence.</i>	acusar, <i>to accuse.</i>
fortaleza, <i>fortress.</i>	anunciar, <i>to announce.</i>
(las) mientes, <i>thoughts.</i>	apoderar (-se), <i>to get possession.</i>
nariz, <i>the nose.</i>	arrepentir (-se), <i>to repent.</i>
niñería, <i>puerility.</i>	azul, <i>blue.</i>
novedad, <i>news.</i>	contar, <i>to relate.</i>
perfidia, <i>perfidy.</i>	cortar (-se), <i>to cut.</i>
precaucion, <i>precaution.</i>	cortesemente, <i>politely.</i>
rabia, <i>anger.</i>	desmayar (-se), <i>to faint.</i>

divertir (-se), *to amuse.*

equivocar, *to mistake.*

guardar, *to keep.*

jugar, *to play.*

lavar, *to wash.*

limpio, *clean.*

maravillar, *to admire.*

maravillar (-se), *to wonder.*

poner (-se), *to put on.*

quitar (-se), *to take off.*

ridículo, *ridiculous.*

saludar, *to greet.*

sentir (-se), *to feel.*

EXERCISE XVII.

1. ¿No se equivoca V. cuando (V.) dice eso? No me equivoco. 2. ¿Cómo se llama su amigo de V.? Mi amigo se llama Juan? 3. ¿Se pasea V. todos los días? Me paseo cuando el tiempo está bueno. 4. No sé lo que tenemos, pero no podemos dormir cuando nos acostamos. 5. No puedo acordarme de lo que dijo (*said*) este hombre. 6. ¿Se han hablado estas señoras? Creo que ne se han hablado. 7. El hijo de Juan se está muriendo (*morir*); su madre se desmayó. 8. Póngase V. otro cuello; el que V. tiene no está limpio. 9. Cuántos reales tiene (hay en) un peso? Un peso tiene veinte reales. 10. No tengo tiempo para jugar; tengo deseo de dormir. 11. Y teniendo yo más vida, tengo menos libertad (*Calderon*). 12. Qué se ha de hacer?—mañana se venderá la casa. 13. Se han tomado las precauciones (*or*) las precauciones han sido tomadas. 14. Nos guardábamos amistad; nos contábamos cien mil niñerías. 15. Tengo escritas varias cartas á mi madre y á mi hermana. 16. Tienen rabia y están acusándose de perfidia. 17. Tengo el ojo malo; tenemos los piés malos; tiene la rodilla mala.

THEME XVII.

1. What is your name, my friend? My name is Edward. 2. Do you get up early? I get up at half-

past six. 3. I do not know how to amuse myself. I am not well; I shall feel better to-morrow. 4. The enemy (-ies) took possession of one of our fortresses. 5. Why do you ridicule this man? Because he is very ridiculous. 6. My brother will marry when he has (*subj.*) a good situation. 7. Take off your hat in the room. I always take mine off. 8. The boy has cut his finger, and he is washing his hand. 9. Andrew had no reason to (*para*) repent of his confidence. 10. I have the pleasure to announce the news to you. 11. I am hungry; he is ashamed; we were afraid; they are sleepy. 12. Is anything the matter with your brother? No, nothing is the matter with him. 13. He has a long nose, blue eyes, and large hands and feet. 14. How old are you? I am twenty, and my brother is eighteen. 15. This house has a hundred feet of height, and the street has fifty feet of width. 16. This room is sixty feet long and (*or by, por*) sixteen wide.

LESSON XVIII.

IRREGULAR¹ VERBS: *acertar* AND OTHERS—1ST CONJ.

176. SYNOPSIS OF *acertar*, to succeed in guessing, to hit the mark:

<i>acert-ar</i>	<i>acert-ando</i>	<i>acert-ado</i>	<i>aciert-o</i>	<i>acert-é</i>
<i>acert-aba</i>		<i>he acert-ado</i>	<i>aciert-e</i>	<i>acert-ara</i>
<i>acertar-é</i>		etc.	<i>aciert-a</i>	<i>acert-ase</i>
<i>acertar-ía</i>				<i>acert-are</i>

¹ *Plegar* (to fold) and *desplegar* (to unfold) are both regular and irregular; *atentar*, in the sense of to attempt a crime; *aterrar*, as meaning to frighten; *atestar*, in the sense of to witness, are regular; so also *profesar*, to profess.

Throughout the present tense, wherever the stress falls upon the stem-vowel, this vowel undergoes a change. This rule holds for the majority of verbs with

177. CONJUGATION OF *acertar* :

<i>acert-ar</i>	<i>acert-ando</i>	<i>acert-ado</i>	<i>aciert-o</i> ¹	<i>acert-é</i>
<i>acert-aba</i>			-as	-aste
-abas			-a	-ó
-aba			<i>acert-amos</i>	-ámos
-ábamos			-ais	-ásteis
-ábais			<i>aciert-an</i>	-aron
-aban				
<i>acertar-é</i>		<i>aciert-e</i>	<i>acert-ara,</i>	-ase
-ás		-es	-aras,	-ases
-á		-e	-ara,	-ase
-émos		<i>acert-emos</i>	-áramos,	-ásemos
-éis		-eis	-árais,	-áseis
-án		<i>aciert-en</i>	-aran,	-asen
<i>acertar-ía</i>		—	<i>acert-are</i>	
-ías		<i>aciert-a</i>	-ares	
-ía		-e V.	-are	
-íamos		—	-áremos	
-íais		<i>acert-ad</i>	-áreis	
-ían		<i>aciert-en</i> VV.	-aren	

178. SYNOPSIS OF *acordar*, *to agree* :

<i>acord-ar</i>	<i>acord-ando</i>	<i>acord-ado</i>	<i>acuerd-o</i>	<i>acord-é</i>
<i>acord-aba</i>		he <i>acord-ado</i>	<i>acuerd-e</i>	<i>acord-ara</i>
<i>acordar-é</i>		etc.	<i>acuerd-a</i>	<i>acord-ase</i>
<i>acordar-ía</i>				<i>acord-are</i>

179. CONJUGATION OF *acordar*²:

<i>acord-ar</i>	<i>acord-ando</i>	<i>acord-ado</i>	<i>acuerd-o</i>	<i>acord-é</i>
<i>acord-aba</i>	he	“	-as	-aste
-abas	has	“	-a	-ó
-aba	ha	“	<i>acord-amos</i>	-ámos
-ábamos	hemos	“	-ais	-ásteis
-ábais	habeis	“	<i>acuerd-an</i>	-aron
-aban	han	“		

¹ Where the stem-syllable is accented, it changes.

² When meaning *to tune*, regular.

acordar-é	acuerd-e	acord-ara,	-ase
-ás	-es	-aras,	-ases
-á	-e	-ara,	-ase
-émos	acord-emos	-áramos,	-ásemos
-éis	-eis	-árais,	-áseis
-án	acuerd-en	-aran,	-asen
acordar-ía	—	acord-are	
-ías	acuerd-a	etc.	
-ía	-e V.		
-íamos	—		
-íais	acord-ad		
-ían	acuerd-en	VV.	

180. SYNOPSIS OF andar, to walk :

and-ar	and-ando	and-ado	and-o	<u>anduv-e</u>
and-aba	he	and-ado	and-e	anduv-iera
andar-é		etc.	and-a	anduv-iese
andar ía				anduv-iere

181. CONJUGATION OF andar :

and-ar	and-ando	and-ado	and-o	anduv-e	
and-aba	he	“	-as	-iste	
-abas	has	“	-a	-o	
-aba	ha	“	-amos	-imos	
-ábamos	hemos	“	-ais	-ísteis	
-ábais	habeis	“	-an	-ieron	
-aban	han	“			
→ andar-é			and-e	anduv-iera,	-iese
-ás			-es	-ieras,	-ieses
-á			-e	-iera,	-iese
-émos			-emos	-iéramos,	-iésemos
-éis			-eis	-iérais,	-iéseis
-án			-en	-ieran,	-iesen
andar-ía			—	anduv-iere	
-ías			and-a	-ieres	
ía			-e V.	-iere	
-íamos			—	-iéremos	
-íais			and-ad	-iéreis	
-ían			-en	VV.	-ieren.

182. CONJUGATION OF *dar*,¹ *to give*:

dar	dando	dado	doy	dí	
d-aba	he	“	d-as	-iste	
-abas	has	“	-a	-ió	
-aba	ha	“	-amos	-imos	
-ábamos	hemos	“	-ais	-ísteis	
-ábais	habeis	“	-an	-ieron	
-aban	han	“			
dar-é			d-é	d-iera,	-iese
-ás			-es	-ieras,	-ieses
-á			-é	-iera,	-iese
-émos			-emos	-iéramos,	-iésemos
éis			-eis	-iérais,	-iéseis
-án			-en	-ieran,	-iesen
dar-ía			—	d-iere	
-ías			da	-ieres	
-ía			dé V.	-iere	
-íamos			—	-iéremos	
-íais			dad	-iéreis	
ían			den VV.	-ieren	

183. CONJUGATION OF *jugar*, *to play*: (formerly *jogar*)

jugar	jug-ando	jug-ado	jueg-o ²	jugu-é	
jug-aba	he	“	-as	jug-aste	
-abas	has	“	-a	-ó	
-aba	ha	“	jug-amos	-ámos	
-ábamos	hemos	“	-ais	-ásteis	
-ábais	habeis	“	jueg-an	-aron	
-aban	han	“			
jugar-é			juegu-e	jug-ara,	-ase
-ás			-es	-aras,	-ases
-á			-e	-ara,	-ase
-émos			jugu-emos	-áramos,	-ásemos
éis			u-eis	-árais,	-áseis
-án			juegu-en	-aren,	-asen

¹ The synopsis may be readily taken from full conjugation, and should be given orally for each verb.

² See note 1, p. 82.

jugar-ía	—	jug-are
-ías	juega	-ares
-ía	juegu-e V.	-are
·íamos	—	-áremos
-íais	jugad	-áreis
-ían	juegu-en VV.	-aren

184. (a) *Errar*, to err, takes *y*¹ before it in the pres. indic. and parts derived from it, except first and second person plur.

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *errar* *err-ando* *err-ado* *yerr-o* *err-é*

	PRES. INDIC.	PRES. SUBJ.	IMPERATIVE.
<i>trial ie saps becomes ye</i>	yerr-o	yerr-e	—
	yerr-as	yerr-es	yerr-a
	yerr-a	yerr-e	yerr-e V.
	err-amos	err-emos	—
	err-ais	err-eis	err-ad
	yerr-an	yerr-en	yerr-en VV.

(b) *Constar*, to be evident; *antojarse*, to long, are used only in the third person sing. and plur.; *pesar* in the sense of to regret is impersonal (third person sing.).

VOCABULARY XVIII.

el fuego, fire.	las de Villadiego, French leave.
guante, glove.	acertar, to hit the mark.
puñetazo, blow with the fist.	almorzar, to breakfast.
respeto, respect.	cegar, to blind.
la bofetada, slap.	cerrar, to shut.
culpa, blame.	confesar, to confess.
escopeta, gun.	costar, to cost.
falta, fault.	desaprobar, to disapprove.
intencion, intention.	descontar, to discount.
justicia, justice.	despertar, to awake.
nación, nation.	despoblar, to depopulate.
pelota, ball (game).	endeudado, in debt.
pieza, piece (play).	entrar, to enter.
promesa, promise.	gobernar, to govern.

¹ This *y* is for *i* (instead of *ierro* we have *yerro*, etc.).

helar, *to freeze.*
 junto, *near.*
 manifestar, *to manifest.*
 merendar, *lunch.*
 negar, *to deny.*
 nevar, *to snow.*
 obligar, *to oblige.*

recomendar, *to recommend.*
 reprobar, *to reprove.*
 sentar (-se), *to sit down.*
 sin embargo, *nevertheless.*
 sorprender, *to surprise.*
 temblar, *to tremble.*
 volar, *to fly.*

EXERCISE XVIII.

1. El príncipe gobierna sus estados con moderación y justicia. 2. Qué piensa V. de la pieza que se representó ayer. 3. Los vicios despueblan las naciones más que las guerras. 4. No me acuerdo de lo que me ha dicho (*said*), pero me acordaré (de ello). 5. Me dió un puñetazo ; le dí á el una bofetada muy fuerte. 6. Si V. me diera (*or diese*) su perro, le daría á V. mi escopeta. 7. Si V. encuentra (*or encontrare*) á un anciano salúdele V. con respeto. 8. El hombre manifiesta buenas intenciones y confiesa sus faltas. 9. Temo que V. desapruébe la acción, sin embargo no la niego. 10. Acuérdes V. de su promesa y recomiende me V. á su amigo. 11. Hiela (*it freezes*) y nieva mucho este año en Ithaca. 12. ¡ Acuestese V. amigo mio ! Gracias ! No tengo gana de acostarme. 13. Cuéntenos V. cómo pasó el (su) tiempo ayer por la mañana. 14. Mi sobrino se echó á reir (*laughed aloud*) al tiempo de retirarse. 15. ¿ Piensa V. ir al baile esta noche ? Yo no pienso ir. 16. El pobre pájaro tiembla y no vuela en la tempestad.

THEME XVIII.

1. At what hour do you breakfast ? We breakfast at six in the morning. 2. When do you begin the work that you wish to write ? 3. I breakfast at seven,

do not lunch in the evening, and go to bed early. 4. We marched (*pret.*) all night in order to surprise the enemy (-ies). 5. I always give you good advice(s), but you forget it (them) often. 6. The boy plays at ball this morning. We do not play. 7. Discount this letter of exchange that I have received to-day. 8. Why do you begin your labor so late? I do not awaken. 9. If he gave less to the poor he would not be so in debt. 10. Sit down, sir. I do not sit down, because I have not time. 11. Shut the door of my room. It is already shut, sir. 12. I am not to (have not the) blame. Why do you reprove me? 13. How much do these gloves cost? They cost two pesetas a pair. 14. He reached for his sword, and they took French leave. 15. It pleases me to sit somewhere near the fire. 16. The dust blinds me, and forces me to enter the house.

LESSON XIX.

IRREGULAR VERBS : **atender** AND OTHERS—SECOND CONJUGATION.

185. CONJUGATION OF **atender**, *to mind, to heed*:

atend-er	atend-iendo	atend-ido	atiend ¹ -o	atend-í
atend-ía		and atento	-es	-iste
-ías		he atend-ido	-e	-ió
-ía		etc.	atend-emos	-imos
-íamos			-eis	-ísteis
-íais			atiend-en	-ieron
-ían				

¹ See note 1, p. 82.

atender-é		atiend-a	atend-iera, -iese
-ás		-as	etc.
-á		-a	
-émos		atend-amos	
-éis		-ais	
-án		atiend-an	
atender-ía		—	atend-iere
-ías		atiende	etc.
-ía		atiend-a V.	
-íamos		—	
-íais		atended	
-ían		atiend-an VV.	

186. CONJUGATION OF *mover*, to move :

mov-er	mov-iendo	mov-ido	muev-o	mov-í
mov-ía		he mov-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	-ió
mover-é			mov-emos	-imos
etc.			-eis	-ísteis
mover-ía			muev-en	-ieron
etc.			muev-a	mov-iera, -iese
			-as	etc.
			-a	
			mov-amos	
			-ais	mov-iere
			muev-an	etc.
			—	
			mueve	
			mueva V.	
			—	
			moved	
			muevan VV.	

187. CONJUGATION OF *caer*, to fall (idiomatic to look into):

ca-er	ca-yendo	ca-ido	caigo	caí
ca-ía		he ca-ido	caes	ca-iste
etc.		etc.	cae	cay-ó
caer-é			caemos	caímos
etc.			caeis	caísteis
caen			caen	cayeron

caer-ía		caig-a	ca-yera, -yese
etc.		etc.	etc.
		—	ca-yere
		ca-e	etc.
		caig-a V.	
		—	
		ca-ed	
		caigan VV.	

188. CONJUGATION OF *traer*, to bring, to wear :

tra-er	trayendo	traido	traig-o	traj-e
tra-ía		he traído	tra-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	tra-e	-o
			etc.	etc.
traer-é			traig-a	traj-era, -ese
etc.			etc.	etc.
traer-ía			—	traj-ere
etc.			trae	etc.
			traiga V.	
			—	
			traed	
			traigan VV.	

189. CONJUGATION OF *cocer*, to cook (to boil or to bake):

co-cer	cociendo	cocido	cuez-o	coc-í
coc-ía		he cocido	cuec-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	cuec-e	-ió
cocer-é			coc-emos	-imos
etc.			-eis	-ísteis
			cuec-en	-ieron
cocer-ía			cuez-a	coc-iera, -iese
etc.			-as	etc.
			-a	coc-iere
			coz-amos	etc.
			-ais	
			cuez-an	
			—	
			cuece	coced
			cueza V.	cuezan VV.

190. CONJUGATION OF *hacer*, to do, to make :

hac-er	hac-iendo	hecho	hago	<u>hic-e</u>
hac-ía		he hecho	haces	hic-iste
etc.		etc.	hace	hiz-o
			etc.	hic-imos
har-é			hag-a	etc.
-ás			-as	hic-iera, -iese
etc.			etc.	etc.
har-ía		—	—	hic-iere
-ías		haz	haced	etc.
etc.		haga V. hagan VV.		

191. CONJUGATION OF *satisfacer*, to satisfy :

satisfac-er	(-fac-iendo)	(-fecho)	(-fag-o)	(-fic-e)
satisfac-ía		he satisfecho	(-fac-es)	(-iste)
etc.		etc.	(-ce)	(-fiz-o)
satisfar-é			etc.	(-fic-imos)
etc.			(-fag-a)	etc.
satisfar-ía			(-as)	(-fic-iera, -iese)
etc.			etc.	etc.
			—	(-fic-iere)
			(-face or -faz)	(-faced) etc.
			(-faga V.)	(-fagan VV.)

192. CONJUGATION OF *querer*, to want, to will, to wish ; also to like, to love :

quer-er	quer-iendo	quer-ido	quier-o	quis-e
quer-ía		he quer-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	-o
querr-é			quer-emos	-imos
-ás			-eis	-ísteis
etc.			quier-en	-ieron
querr-ía			quier-a	quis-iera, -iese
-ías			-as	etc.
etc.			-a	quis-iere
			quer-amos	etc.
			-ais	
			quier-an	

quiere quered
 quiera V. quieran VV.

VOCABULARY XIX.

el cirujano, <i>surgeon</i> .	caer, <i>to fall</i> .
concierto, <i>concert</i> .	cocer, <i>to cook, to boil</i> .
corriente, <i>present (month)</i> .	cocer (-se), <i>cook, boil</i> .
costumbre, <i>custom</i> .	desde, <i>since</i> .
embarazo, <i>perplexity</i> .	despacio, <i>slowly</i> .
estudiante, <i>student</i> .	entónces, <i>then</i> .
hornillo, (<i>kitchen</i>) <i>stove</i> .	morder, <i>to bite</i> .
huevo, <i>egg</i> .	mover, <i>to move</i> .
instante, <i>instant</i> .	ofrecer, <i>to offer</i> . [sure).
orno, <i>oven</i> .	pasear (-se), <i>to walk (for plea-</i>
pantalón, <i>pantaloon</i> .	pretender, <i>to pretend</i> .
postre, <i>dessert</i> .	querer, { <i>to want, will, wish ;</i>
reformador, <i>reformer</i> .	{ <i>to like, to love</i> .
sastre, <i>tailor</i> .	satisfacer, <i>to satisfy</i> .
socorro, <i>help</i> .	soñar, <i>to dream</i> .
la librería, <i>bookstore</i> .	trabajar, <i>to work</i> .
mercadería, <i>goods</i> .	traer, <i>to bring, to wear</i> .
pregunta, <i>question</i> .	valuar, <i>to appreciate</i> .
aborrecer, <i>to hate</i> .	volver, <i>to return</i> .
atender, <i>to mind, heed</i> .	

EXERCISE XIX.

1. Pedro quiere á ese hombre, pero yo le aborrezco.
2. ¿Qué pretenden los nuevos reformadores con su soñada igualdad? 3. ¿Qué está mi hijo haciendo? Está escribiendo una carta. 4. Mi hijo acaba de (*has just*) llegar ; se ha paseado (una) hora y media.
5. ¿Tiene él tiempo para (de) trabajar? Si, pero no tiene gana de hacerlo. 6. ¿Ha hecho mis pantalones el sastre? Los tiene hechos. 7. Se manda V. hacer un vestido ; ¿por quién le ha hecho hacer V.? ¿á quién le ha dado V. á hacer? 8. Tenía costumbre el rey de hacer esta pregunta : ¿estais satisfecho?
9. Diré al criado que traiga los postres al instante.
10. ¿Conoce V. á este caballero? Le conozco desde

muchos años. 11. ¿Cuándo quiere V. que hagamos este negocio para V.? 12. Su perro de V. muerde á todos los que quieren entrar en su casa. 13. Es preciso que V. caiga en la pobreza para valuar el socorro. 14. Hizo mucho frio en mi cuarto entónces, mas ahora hace calor. 15. El tren se mueve muy despacio, y llegarémos tarde. 16. Cuando vuelva V. á escribirle, déle V. muchas memorias de mi parte.

THEME XIX.

*perder á = destroy, ruin
- with per- does not take
-nal object.*

1. I have just heard (to say) that the countess de Villegas has lost a son ; it is the queen's surgeon who has killed him. 2. I should like to read some of the romances of Valdes. 3. I do not believe that you will find them in a small bookstore. 4. He has offered to carry to his mother the letter I have written. 5. What has been done with your brother? He became (made himself) doctor. 6. How long has it been since (that) you have breakfasted? A little time since. 7. I shall set sail for Spain the twelfth of the present month. 8. How shall I do to have goods without money? 9. Do you not wear your coat any more? I do not wear it ; it is worn out. 10. What do you wish? We wish money to go to the concert. 11. What do you do on Sundays in the afternoon? We take a walk. 12. He fell into a great perplexity when he learned this news. 13. What kind of weather is it to-day? It is clear and quiet weather. 14. The students pay attention to the words of the philosopher. 15. The eggs are cooked on the stove, and the bread in the oven. 16. I have not again seen (returned to see) him, but they have just seen him.

LESSON XX.

IRREGULAR VERBS OF SECOND CONJUGATION
(CONCLUDED).

193. Caber,¹ *to hold, to be contained in (en):*

cab-er	cab-iendo	cab-ido	quep-o	cup-e
cab-ía		he cab-ido	cab-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	cab-e	-o
cabr-é			etc.	etc.
etc.			quep-a	cup-iera, -iese
cabr-ía			-as	etc.
etc.			-a	cup-iere
			etc.	etc.

_____	_____
cabe	cab-ed
quepa V.	quep-an VV.

194. Oler, *to smell, to scent:*

ol-er	ol-iendo	ol-ido	huel-o	olí
ol-ía			-es	-iste
etc.			-e	-ió
oler-é			ol-emos	etc.
etc.			-eis	ol-iera, -iese
oler-ía			huel-en	etc.
etc.			huel-a	ol-iere
			-as	etc.
			-a	
			ol-amos	
			-ais	
			huel-an	

_____	_____
huel-e	ol-ed
-a V.	huel-an VV.

¹ Subject generally follows this verb: as, en la catedral de Burgos cabe mucha gente.

195. *Placer*,¹ *to please* (impersonal):

placer	placiendo	placido	place	plug-o (plac-íó)
plac-ía			plaz-a (or plegue)	plugu-iera, -iese
placer-á			(or plega)	(plac-iera, -iese)
placer-ía			plegue (or plega)	plugu-iere (plac-iere)

196. *Poder*, *to be able* (a model auxiliary meaning *can, may, could, might*):

poder	pud-iendo	pod-ido	pued-o	pud-e
pod-ía			-es	-iste
etc.			-e	-o
podr-é			pod-emos	etc.
-ás			-eis	pud-iera, -iese
etc.			pued-en	etc.
podr-ía			pued-a	pud-iere
-ías			-as	etc.
etc.			-a	
			pod-amos	
			-ais	
			Imperative wanting.	pued-an

197. *Poner*, *to place, to put*:

poner	pon-iendo	puesto	pong-o	pus-e
pon-ía			pon-es	-iste
etc.			etc.	etc.
pondr-é			pong-a	pus-iera, -iese
etc.			-as	etc.
pondr-ía			etc.	pus-iere
etc.			—	etc.
		pon	pon-ed	
		pong-a V.	pong-an VV.	

¹ *Placer* may be (though it rarely is) used personally and conjugated throughout (subject only to the regular euphonic changes of verbs in *cer*). The compounds of *placer* are regular and not impersonal.

198. *Saber, to know (things); also, to know how :*

saber	sabiendo	sabido	sé	sup-e
sab-ía			sab-es	-iste
etc.			-e	-o
sabr-é			etc.	etc.
etc.			sep-a	sup-iera, -iese
sabr-ía			-as	etc.
etc.			etc.	sup-iere
				etc.
		_____	_____	
		sabe	sabed	
		sep-a V.	sep-an VV.	

199. *Valer, to be worth :*

val-er	valiendo	val-ido	valg-o	val-f
val-ía			val-es	-iste
etc.			-e	-ió
vál-dr-é			etc.	etc.
-ás			valg a	val-iera, -iese
etc.			as	etc.
vál-dr-ía			etc.	val-iere
-ías				etc.
etc.			_____	_____
		val, vale	val-ed	
		valg-a V.	valg-an VV.	

200. *Ver, to see :*

ver	viendo	visto	veo	ví
ve-fa			ves	viste
ve-ías			ve	vió
etc.			vemos	vimos
ver-é			veis	visteis
-ás			ven	vieron
etc.			ve-a	viera, -iese
ver-ía			-as	etc.
etc.			etc.	viere
			_____	etc.
		_____	_____	
		ve	ved	
		vea V.	vean VV.	

201. **Yacer**, to lie (down) :

yac-er	yac-iendo	yac-ido	yazc-o (yazg-o, yag-o)	yac-í
yac-ía			yac-es	etc.
etc.			yac-e	yac-iera, -iese
yacer-é			etc.	etc.
etc.			PRES. SUBJ.	yac-iere
yacer-ía		yazc-a, yazc-as etc.		etc.
etc.		yazg-a, yazg-as etc.		
		yag-a, yag-as etc.		IMPERATIVE.

Rarely used, except in third person of present and imperfect indicative.

—	—
yace or yaz	yaced
yazc-a V.	yazc-an VV.

202. DEFECTIVE¹ VERBS OF SECOND CONJUGATION.—(a) **Acaecer**, **acontecer**, and **suceder** (each meaning *to happen*) are used only in the third persons (sing. and plural). (b) **Pacer**, to pasture, not (or rarely) used in pres. subj. or first person sing. of pres. ind. (c) **Raer**, to erase. The forms in which the stem-vowel comes before **a** or **o** are little used; but pres. ind. **raigo** or **rayo**, **raes**, etc.; pres. subj. **raiga** or **raya**, **raigas** or **rayas**, etc.; imp. ind. **raía**, etc.; pret. ind. **raí**, etc.; **rayera**, etc.; **rayese**, etc.; **rayere**, etc. (d) **Roer**,² to gnaw. Pres. ind. **róo** (**roigo** or **royo**), **roes**, **roe**, etc.; pres. subj. **roa**, **roiga** or **roya**, **roas**, **roigas** or **royas**, etc.—**Corroer**, **corroe**, **corroen**, **corroa**, **corroan**, are the most common forms of **corroer**. (e) **Reponer** (in the sense of) *to reply*, used only in pret. ind.: **repuse**, etc. (f) **Salve**,³ *God bless you*, has no other form than this (second singular imperative). (g) **Soler**, to be accustomed to, has in general use only the following forms :

soler	soliendo	solido	suelo
solía			sueles
etc.			etc.

¹ Some, as will be noted, are simply impersonal.

² Generally marked defective in pres. subj. and first person of pres. ind.

³ **Salve** (and **vale**, see [i]) not in general use.

(h) **Tañer**, to play (music), obsolete in first person sing. pres. ind., which was formerly **tango**.—**Atañer**, to appertain, used only in third person sing. and plur. (i) **Vale**, farewell (see *salve*). **Vale** is generally treated as a noun or interjection.

VOCABULARY XX.

el alto, <i>halt.</i>	la silla, <i>chair.</i>
arroyo, <i>brook.</i>	vaca, <i>cow.</i>
banco, <i>bank.</i>	á todo lo largo, <i>all along.</i>
carnero, <i>sheep.</i>	ausente, <i>absent.</i>
los caudales, <i>funds.</i>	caber, <i>to be contained.</i>
el circo, <i>circus.</i>	defender, <i>to defend.</i>
cofre, <i>trunk.</i>	doler, <i>to pain.</i>
florero, <i>flowerpot.</i>	inmediatamente, <i>immediately.</i>
juez, <i>judge.</i>	luego que, <i>as soon as.</i>
porvenir, <i>future.</i>	obedecer, <i>to obey.</i>
sepulcro, <i>sepulchre.</i>	oler, <i>to smell, scent.</i>
la bolsa, <i>purse.</i>	(en) otra parte, <i>elsewhere.</i>
cabra, <i>goat.</i>	pacer, <i>to pasture.</i>
calidad, <i>quality.</i>	placer, <i>to please.</i>
cama, <i>bed.</i>	poner, <i>to place.</i>
legumbre, <i>vegetable.</i>	próximo, <i>next.</i>
lista, <i>list (menu).</i>	soler, <i>to be accustomed.</i>
opinion, <i>opinion.</i>	valer, <i>to be worth.</i>
sábana, <i>sheet.</i>	yacer, <i>to lie.</i>

EXERCISE XX.

1. Podrá V. comenzar sus lecciones de nadar mañana. 2. Me parece que todavía no puedo comenzar; no tengo tiempo. 3. Hay mucha gente que pierden mucho en darse á conocer. 4. La cabeza me duele y quiero acostarme ahora mismo. 5. Puede ser que yo le vea la primavera próxima en su casa. 6. ¡Pluguiera á Dios que yo pudiera ir á Europa con VV.! 7. Nos pusimos en camino á las cinco é¹ hicimos alto á las doce. 8. En el teatro de Burdeos

¹ y before initial i or hi is é.

caben dos mil personas. 9. ¿Piensa V. que el paño de Sedan valga más que el de Louviers? 10. Estas legumbres son de una buena calidad, huelen bien y se cuecen bien. 11. Luego que supe que su mujer había llegado fui (*I went*) á visitarle. 12. ¿Qué ve V.? Nada, pero veremos el sol en algunos minutos. 13. Las vacas pacen en el campo junto al arroyo. 14. No he visto á mi amigo. ¿Sabe V. lo que le ha sucedido? 15. Defiendo á mis amigos cuando están ausentes. 16. Cuando veamos á este hombre le diremos nuestra opinion.

THEME XX.

1. Who put the flowerpot here? The servant put it on the chair. 2. Now let us read the menu (list) and know what we have (are) to eat. 3. I know that he can be useful to you if he wishes. 4. I know your judges; they will do for you all that they can. 5. He is accustomed to write to his father every (all the) week(s). 6. Put your funds in the bank; they will be more safe there than elsewhere. 7. Know that I wish that they obey me immediately. 8. Many more garments would go in this trunk if you would arrange them well. 9. This horse will be worth three hundred dollars in the Spring. 10. Let them prepare me a good bed and let them put on a clean sheet. 11. If we knew (*subj.*) the future we should be very unhappy. 12. He has just arrived, and his friend lies in the sepulchre. 13. The sheep and the goats pasture all along the road. 14. This theatre holds two hundred more persons than the circus. 15. He knows that I can be useful to him if I wish to be so. 16. This purse contains more gold but less silver than mine.

LESSON XXI.

SOME IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

203. CONJUGATION OF *sentir, to feel, to perceive* :

sentir	sint-iendo	sent-ido	sient-o	sent-í
sent-ía		he sent-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	sint-ió
			sent-imos	sent-ímos
			-is	-ísteis
sentir-é			sient-en	sint-ieron
etc.			sient-a	sint-iera, -iese
sentir-ía			-as	etc.
etc.			-a	sint-iere
			sint-amos	etc.
			-ais	
			sient-an	
	IMPERATIVE.			
	sient-e	sentid		
	sient-a V.	sient-an VV.		

204. *Pedir, to ask* :

pedir	pid-iendo	ped-ido	pid-o	ped-í
ped-ía		he ped-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	pid-ió
pedir-é			ped-imos	ped-ímos
etc.			-ís	-ísteis
pedir-ía			pid-en	pid-ieron
etc.			pid-a	pid-iera, -iese
			-as	etc.
			etc.	pid-iere
				etc.
	IMPERATIVE.			
	pide	ped-id		
	pid-a V.	pid-an VV.		

205. *Conducir, to conduct* :

conduc-ir	conduc-iendo	conduc-ido	conduzc-o	conduj-e
conduc-ía		he conduc-ido	conduc-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	etc.	etc.

conducir-é	IMPERATIVE.		conduzc-a	conduj-era, -ese
etc.	—	—	conduzc-as	etc.
conducir-ía	conduc-e	conduc-id	etc.	conduj-ere
etc.	conduzc-a V.	conduzc-an VV.		etc.

206. Decir, to say, to tell:

decir	dic iendo	dich-o	dig-o	dij-e
dec-ía		he dich-o	dic-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	dic-e	-o
dir-é			dec-imos	-imos
dir-ás			dec-is	-ísteis
etc.			dic en	-eron
dir-ía	IMPERATIVE.		dig-a	dij-era, -ese
dir-ías	dí	decid	-as	etc.
etc.	dig-a V.	dig-an VV.	etc.	dij-ere
				etc.

imper. Sing.
 contra-
 dice, scint
 en A. epda

207. Reir, to laugh:

reir	ri-endo (riyendo) ¹	re-ido	ri-o	re-í
re-ía		he re-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	rió
reir-é			re-imos	re-ímos
etc.			-ís	-ísteis
reir-ía			ri-en	ri-eron
etc.	IMPERATIVE.		ri-a	ri-era, -ese
	—	—	-as	etc.
	ri-e	re-id	etc.	ri-ere
	ri-a V.	ri-an VV.		etc.

208. Instruir, to instruct:

instruir	instru-yendo	instru-ido	instruy-o	instru-í
instru-ía		he instru-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	-yó
instruir-é			instru-imos	-ímos
etc.			-ís	-ísteis
instruir-ía			instruy-en	-yeron
etc.	IMPERATIVE.		instruy-a	instru-yera, -yese
	—	—	-as	etc.
	instruy-e	instru-id	etc.	instru-yere
	-a V.	instruy-an VV.		etc.

¹ Old form.

209. Venir, to come :

venir	vin-iendo	ven-ido	veng-o	vin-e
ven-ía		he ven-ido	vien-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	-o
vendr-é			ven-imos	-imos
etc.			-ís	-isteis
vendr-ía			vien-en	-ieron
etc.	IMPERATIVE.		veng-a	vin-iera, -iese
	_____	_____	-as	etc.
ven	ven-id		etc.	vin-iere
veng-a V.	veng-an VV.			etc.

VOCABULARY XXI.

el abogado, <i>lawyer.</i>	conducir, <i>to conduct.</i>
peligro, <i>peril.</i>	conseguir, <i>to obtain.</i>
la cocina, <i>kitchen.</i>	durante, <i>during.</i>
comida, (<i>repast</i>) <i>meal.</i>	generalmente, <i>generally.</i>
conducta, <i>conduct.</i>	maldecir, <i>curse.</i>
lección, <i>lesson.</i>	obtener, <i>obtain.</i> e
ópera, <i>opera.</i>	pedir, <i>to ask.</i>
península, <i>peninsula.</i>	preferir, <i>to prefer.</i>
acaso, <i>perhaps.</i>	provenir, <i>to arise.</i>
aguardar, <i>to wait.</i>	traducir, <i>to translate.</i>
amparar, <i>to protect.</i>	vulgarmente, <i>commonly.</i>

EXERCISE XXI.

1. ¿ V. dijo que yo no había hecho mi deber, es verdad? 2. Él no ha venido, porque V. ne le ha convidado. 3. Puede V. decirme cuál es el asunto de esta ópera? 4. ¿ Qué se dice vulgarmente de las iglesias de Castilla? 5. ¿ Qué libro traducen VV. del francés al español? Gil Blas. 6. Dice que no tiene dinero ahora, y es preciso aguardar hasta el mes próximo. 7. ¿ Porqué no le dice V. á su sastre que V. no puede pagarle ahora? 8. ¿ De dónde viene eso? Viene de la casa vieja del valle. 9. Mi padre vino á este pais cuando tenía veinte años. 10. Yo no siento

nada ahora ; acaso lo sentiré más tarde. 11. Él no le pedirá á V. más dinero durante esta semana. 12. Él es quien sirve á la mesa ; no servimos más que el café. 13. Me rio porque con tantas lecciones V. ha hecho tan (poco progreso) pocos adelantos. 14. Él prefirió el empleo de juez al de presidente y se arrepiente ahora. 15. Los malos maldicen aun á los que los amparan. 16. El abogado instruye á su hijo en las leyes del país.

THEME XXI.

1. What do you wish that I say (*subj.*) except that it is bad weather? 2. What are you doing in the kitchen? I am cooking the meat for dinner. 3. Come: I wish to present you to my cousin who has just arrived. 4. In what year did the Romans come to the Spanish peninsula? 5. Where are you conducting this child? I am conducting him home. 6. What do you ask for this horse? I do not ask except what it is worth. 7. Can you translate this? I don't translate very well. 8. I asked a hundred dollars from (á) my father and they came to me to-day. 9. We are sorry (feel it) that you do not come with us to the concert. 10. How do you feel? I feel very well to-day, (many) thanks. 11. I do not think he will obtain (*subj.*) the employment that he asks. 12. The misfortunes of men arise generally from their bad conduct. 13. You do not merit that I give you the news from your friend. 14. The stranger began to laugh at the time of retiring (himself). 15. I compete for this employment with him, but I doubt that I obtain it. 16. I fear my friend does not inform (*subj.*) himself of the dangers of the place.

á casa

LESSON XXII.

CONCLUSION OF IRREGULAR VERBS OF THIRD CON-
JUGATION.—DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THIRD
CONJUGATION.

210. *Adquirir, to get, to acquire :*

adquir-ir	adquir-iendo	adquir-ido	adquier-o	adquir í
adquir-íá		he adquir-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	-ió
adquirir-é			adquir-imos	-ímos
etc.			-ís	-ísteis
adquirir-íá			adquier-en	-ieron
etc.			adquier-a	adquir-iera, -iese
			-as	etc.
			-a	adquir-iere
			adquir-amos	etc.

IMPERATIVE.

adquier-e	adquir-id	-ais
adquier-a V.	adquier-an VV.	adquier-an

211. *Asir (used figuratively), to seize :*

as-ir	as-iendo	as-ido	as-go	as-í
as-íá		he as-ido	es	-iste
etc.		etc.	e	-ió
asir-é			-imos	-ímos
etc.			-ís	-ísteis
asir íá			-en	-ieron
etc.			asg-a	as-iera, -iese
			-as	etc.

Rarely used in first
person singular of
pres. ind., or in any
person of pres. subj.

	etc.	as-iere
	etc.	etc.
as-e	as-id	
asg-a V.	asg-an VV.	

212. Dormir, *to sleep*:

dormir	durm-iendo	dorm-ido	duerm-o	dorm-f
dorm-ía		he dorm-ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	durm-ió
dormir-é			dorm-imos	dorm-ímos
etc.			-ís	-ís
dormir-ía			duerm-en	durm-ieron
etc.			duerm-a	durm-iera, -iese
			-as	etc.
			-a	durm-iere
			duerm-amos	etc.
			-ais	
			duerm-an	

IMPERATIVE.

duerm-e	dorm-id
duerm-a V.	duerm-an VV.

213. Erguir,¹ *to hold up (the head, etc.)*:

erguir	irgu iendo	ergu-ido	irgo or	yergo
ergu-ía		he ergu-ido	irgues	yergues
etc.		etc.	irgue	yergue
erguir-é			erguimos	erguimos
etc.			erguís	erguís
erguir-ía			irguen	yerguen
etc.			irg-a or	yerg-a
PRET., etc.			-as	-as
ergu-í			-a	-a
-iste			irgamos	
irgu-ió			irgais	
ergu-ímos			irg-an	yerg-an
-ísteis				
irgu-ieron				
irgu-iera, -iese		irgue or yergue	erguid	
etc.		irga V. yerga V.	irgan VV. yergan VV.	
irgu-ere				
etc.				

¹ Little used in pres. ind. and pres. subj.

214. Ir, to go :

ir	yendo	ido	voy	fui
iba		he ido	vas	-iste
ibas		etc.	va	-é
iba			vamos	-imos
íbamos			vais	-ísteis
íbais			van	-eron
iban			vay-a	fu-era, -ese
iré		IMPERATIVE.	-as	etc.
etc.	_____	_____	etc.	fu-ere
ir-ía	ve	id		etc.
etc.	vaya V.	vayan VV.		

215. Morir, to die :

morir	mur-iendo	muerto	muer-o	mor-í
mor-ía		he muerto	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	mur-ió
morir-é			mor-imos	mor-ímos
etc.			-ís	-ísteis
morir-ía			muer-en	mur-ieron
etc.			muer-a	mur-iera, -iese
			-as	etc.
			-a	mur-iere
	IMPERATIVE.		mur-amos	etc.
	_____	_____		
	muer-e	mor-id	-ais	
	muer-a V.	muer-an VV.	muer-an	

216. Oír, to hear :

oír	oyendo	oído	oig-o	oí
o-ía		he oído	oy es	o-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	-yó
oír-é			o-imos	-ímos
etc.			o-ís	-ísteis
oír-ía			oy-en	-yeron
etc.			oig-a	o-yera, -yese
	IMPERATIVE.		-as	etc.
	_____	_____		
	oy-e	oid	etc.	o-yere
	oig-a V.	oig-an VV.		etc.

217. *Podrir* or *pu**drir*, to decay, to rot :

<i>podrir</i>	or	<i>pu</i> <i>drir</i>	<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -iendo	<i>podr</i> -ido
(<i>podr</i> -ía)	“	<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -ía		he <i>podr</i> -ido
etc.		etc.		etc.
(<i>podrir</i> -é)	“	<i>pu</i> <i>drir</i> -é		
etc.		etc.		
(<i>podrir</i> -ía)	“	<i>pu</i> <i>drir</i> -ía		
etc.		etc.		
PRES. IND. <i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -o		PRET. IND. etc. <i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -í		or <i>podr</i> -í
	-es		-iste	“ -iste
	-e		<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -íó	
<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> (<i>podr</i>)-imos			-ímos or	-ímos
-ís			-isteis	“ -isteis
<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -en			<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -ieron	
<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -a			<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -iera, -iese	
-as			etc.	
etc.			<i>pu</i> <i>dr</i> -iere	
			etc.	

*pu**dr*-e *pu**dr*-id (*podr*-id)

*pu**dr*-a V. *pu**dr*-an VV.

(Forms beginning *pu* preferred by Sp. Ac. Grammar to those beginning *po*, except in pres. inf. and past part.)

218. *Salir*, to go out :

<i>sal</i> -ir	<i>sal</i> -iendo	<i>sal</i> -ido	<i>salg</i> -o	<i>sal</i> -í
<i>sal</i> -ía		he <i>sal</i> -ido	-es	-iste
etc.		etc.	-e	-íó
<i>saldr</i> -é			-imos	-ímos
-ás			-ís	-ísteis
etc.			-en	-ieron
<i>saldr</i> -ía	IMPERATIVE.		<i>salg</i> -a	<i>sal</i> -iera, -iese
-ías	—	—	-as	etc.
etc.	<i>sal</i>	<i>sal</i> -id	etc.	<i>sal</i> -iere
	<i>salg</i> -a V.	<i>salg</i> -an VV.		etc.

219. DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THIRD CONJUGATION.—(a)

Several verbs are used only in those forms whose personal endings begin with *i* (but the future is used, however); they are then defective in the present indicative (first and second per-

sons plural only being used); in the imperative (the second plural only being found), and are without the pres. subj. Other forms are regular; they are: *abolir*, *aguerrir*,¹ *arrecirse*, *aterirse*,¹ *colorir*, *desmarrirse*, *despavorir*, *embair*, *empedernir*,² *garantir*, *manir*. (b) *Concernir*, conjugated like *sentir*, § 203, is practically defective in future ind. and in cond. and imp. moods, and used elsewhere only in third person sing. and plur.

VOCABULARY XXII.

el arzobispo, <i>archbishop</i> .	asir, <i>to seize</i> .
calor, <i>heat</i> .	bendecir, <i>to bless</i> .
congreso, <i>congress</i> .	concernir, <i>to concern</i> .
ministro, <i>minister</i> .	desconocido, <i>unknown</i> .
la cárcel, <i>prison</i> .	erguir, <i>to hold up</i> .
decision, <i>decision</i> .	evitar, <i>to avoid</i> .
diligencia, <i>diligence</i> .	ir, <i>to go</i> .
libra, <i>pound (money)</i> .	morir, <i>to die</i> .
manera, <i>manner</i> .	oir, <i>to hear</i> .
abolir, <i>to abolish</i> .	podrir, } <i>to rot</i> .
adquirir, <i>to acquire</i> .	podrir, }

EXERCISE XXII.

1. Esta casa me sale (*stands me*) en más de mil libras. 2. Se quedó dormido y su hermano no le ha despertado. 3. ¿De cuántos años murió su tía de V.? Murió de treinta y tres años. 4. No puedo salir hoy; tengo un fuerte dolor de cabeza. 5. V. adquiere conocimientos estudiando con atención y diligencia. 6. El arzobispo de Toledo estuvo (*was on the point*) para morir anoche. 7. Lo siento mucho; iré á verle mañana por la mañana. 8. ¿Va V. al concierto esta noche? No señor, voy á casa. 9. Mi amigo fué una vez á la catedral y una vez al museo. 10. Deseo que

¹ In parts used like *sentir*, § 203.

² In parts used like *pedir*, § 204.

V. vaya á su casa, porque puede ser que él vaya á Paris. 11. ¿Oyó V. lo que dijo este hombre? Oí todo lo que dijo. 12. Aquí yace un hombre que murió pobre y desconocido. 13. Cuando V. venga á Paris vaya V. á ver al ministro. 14. ¿Dónde iba V. ayer cuando le encontré á V. en la plaza? 15. Muchos han dejado podrirse á sus parientes en la cárcel. 16. Esta decision del juez concierne á los intereses de V.

THEME XXII.

1. The books he has bought stand him in a thousand pesetas. 2. Are you asleep? I am not asleep now. What have you to say to me? 3. In (de) what manner do we acquire useful knowledge(s)? 4. Whom has the old man blessed? He blessed his sons. 5. Your father has just gone out; he will return in two hours. 6. At what hour do you go out every day? I go out at ten o'clock. 7. Do you hear what I say? I hear very well, but I have to go out. 8. At what hour did you go (repeatedly) to the house of the doctor? At eleven. 9. Our father does not wish that we sleep so late. 10. The general has died; he died a year since in a battle. 11. He was born in eighteen hundred and died in eighteen hundred and thirty-six. 12. We have gone out early this morning to avoid the heat. 13. I shall go out to-morrow at six o'clock; I shall go to see some friends. 14. Do you wish that we go (*subj.*) to hunt? Yes, we shall go to-morrow. 15. Congress has abolished the laws against the blacks. 16. My sister is dead; it was yesterday that I went to see her.

LESSON XXIII.

IMPERSONAL VERBS¹—VERBS USED NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

220. The following impersonal verbs are used only as such:

conciérne, <i>it concerns.</i>	deshiela, <i>it thaws.</i>
importa, <i>it imports.</i>	llueve, <i>it rains.</i>
aborea, <i>it becomes day, dawn.</i>	llovizna, <i>it drizzles.</i>
amanece, ² } <i>it becomes morning.</i>	mollizna, <i>it rains.</i>
} <i>the day breaks.</i>	nieva, <i>it snows.</i>
anochece, <i>it becomes night.</i>	obscorece, <i>it becomes dark.</i>
diluvia, <i>it rains heavily.</i>	relampagua, <i>it lightens.</i>
escarcha, <i>it makes frost.</i>	truena, <i>it thunders.</i>
graniza, <i>it hails.</i>	ventea, <i>it blows.</i>
hiela, <i>it freezes.</i>	ventisca, <i>it storms (with snow).</i>

(a) God is sometimes placed as subject of these verbs. *Llover*, *amanecer*, and *anochece* are occasionally used personally.

(b) *hiela* and *nieva* are used in Exercise XVIII, sentence 11.

221. *Acaecer*,² *to happen*; *acontecer*, *to happen*; *bastar*, *to suffice*; *suced*, *to happen*, are used both impersonally and personally (third person sing. or plur.).

222. (a) Besides being used impersonally the following verbs are used personally and in all persons and both numbers:

me admira, <i>it surprises me.</i>	toca, <i>to touch (concern).</i>
conviene, <i>it suits.</i>	es, <i>it is.</i>
me interesa, <i>it interests me.</i>	está, <i>it is.</i>
parece, ³ <i>it seems.</i>	hay, ⁵ <i>there is, there are.</i>
me pesa, <i>it grieves me.</i>	hace, <i>it is, etc.</i>
puede, ⁴ <i>it is possible.</i>	

¹ *Haber* is conjugated impersonally, § 159. Other impersonal verbs are conjugated analogously, the conjugation to which they belong being taken into account. ² See § 202 (a).

³ See Exercise XX, sent. 2. ⁴ See Exercise XX, sent. 5.

⁵ Though *hay* is not used personally, its verb, *haber*, is so used.

(b) Here belong all impersonally used reflexive verbs: as, *se dice no se ve á las cinco*. The third person plural is sometimes used impersonally: as, *nos escriben*.

223. (a) The verb is made negative by placing **no** before it (and before its auxiliary, and the conjunctive object pronoun): as, **yo no he podido venir, no he podido yo venir, no he podido venir yo** (never **no yo he podido venir**). (b) Two negatives do not generally destroy each other in Spanish as they do in English, but add strength each to the other: as, **no lo he visto jamas, I have never seen it; no deseo verla nunca, I never wish to see her**. (c) When the other negative is brought before the verb, the **no** is omitted: as, **nadie lo sabe**. (d) With some time-phrases: as, **en mi vida, en toda mi vida, en toda la noche**, etc., when placed before the verb, the **no** is omitted: as, **en toda mi vida me han sacado diente ni muela de la boca**, *in all my life they have not taken a front tooth, nor*, etc. (e) The **no** is occasionally pleonastic and should be omitted when doubt would arise: as, **él es más rico que no ella; temía no entrara**, *I feared he might come in*.

224. (a) The verb is often used interrogatively with interrogative adverbs: such as, **cómo, cuál, cuánto, cuándo, dónde, por, qué**, etc. (and, of course, with interrogative pronouns: as, **quién**, etc.): as, **qué tal van los asuntos?** *how do affairs go?* (b) **No** often introduces questions (**¿no tiene V. algo que darnos?**) or is used elsewhere in interrogative phrases: as, **¿cuán dulce no es la esperanza!** (c) While the subject generally follows the verb in interrogative sentences, it does not always do so: as, **¿sabe él que estoy aquí? ¿Este es el rostro que yo ví traspasado (afflicted)? ¿El ha ido allá?**

VOCABULARY XXIII.

el aire, <i>air, wind.</i>	degradar(-se), <i>to degrade (oneself)</i>
bledo, <i>wild amaranth.</i>	desanimar (-se), <i>to be discour-</i>
cielo, <i>heaven.</i>	despreciable, <i>despicable. [aged.</i>
descanso, <i>rest.</i>	dictar, <i>to dictate.</i>
lamento, <i>lamentation.</i>	emborrachar (-se), <i>to get drunk.</i>
partido, <i>course.</i>	fuera (de), <i>out (of).</i>
remedio, <i>resource, part.</i>	importa, <i>imports.</i>
requisito, <i>requirement.</i>	lastimar, <i>to grieve.</i>
rostro, <i>face.</i>	llover, <i>to rain.</i>
la alegría, <i>joy.</i>	necesitar, <i>to need.</i>
enhoramala, <i>ill-luck.</i>	nublado, <i>cloudy.</i>
esperanza, <i>hope.</i>	oscuro, <i>dark.</i>
luna, <i>moon.</i>	pesar (-se), <i>to weigh, distress.</i>
misericordia, <i>mercy.</i>	que tal, <i>how.</i>
pretension, <i>pretension.</i>	relampaguear, <i>to lighten.</i>
seña, <i>sign.</i>	repetir, <i>to repeat.</i>
voluntad, <i>will.</i>	sacar, <i>to pull out.</i>
antiguo, <i>old.</i>	seco, <i>dry, meagre.</i>
bastar, <i>to be enough.</i>	traspasado, <i>afflicted.</i>
convencer, <i>to convince.</i>	tronar, <i>to thunder.</i>

EXERCISE XXIII.

1. El abogado me ha dicho lo que en este negocio importa. 2. El cielo muchas veces suele llover sus misericordias en el tiempo que están más secas las esperanzas. 3. Si todas estas señas no bastan no puedo convencerla. 4. "Me pesa de mis trabajos," me ha dicho su padre. 5. No puede ser que jamas hayan servido para cosa alguna. 6. Con todos los requisitos que son necesarios es menester no desanimarse. 7. Está nublado y está nevando y helando esta tarde. 8. Hará luna esta noche ; hace sol y hace más aire que hace un año. 9. Ayer tronó y relampagueó repetidas veces, y llovió un poco. 10. Acontecieron esas desgracias sin esperarlas. 11. Se necesita des-

canso despues (no ántes) del trabajo. 12. ¿ Conoce V. á aquella buena anciana? Conozco á aquella, no buena, pero sí anciana. 13. Hace tan oscuro que no sé si vengo ó no fuera de camino. 14. A ninguno importaba un bledo que la ciudad hubiese sido lo que ya no era, ni había de volver á ser nunca. 15. ¿ No te lastiman más, los lamentos de todos esós infelices? 16. Mi querido príncipe, dónde se fueron vuestras alegrías antiguas?

THEME XXIII.

1. It is necessary that you wait (*subj.*) for my brother. 2. It is necessary to study much, to learn a language well. 3. There is no other resource; you have to come soon to go to the store. 4. It has frozen to-day; but it was fine weather yesterday when I came. 5. How long (much time) since you were in Paris? 6. How many years (are there) have you been (are) in the city? 7. Reason demands that man (may) follow more the prudent counsels than his own will. 8. If that happens, we shall take the resolution that prudence dictates to us. 9. There is nothing so despicable as a man who degrades himself [by] getting drunk. 10. It is necessary that you desist from your pretensions. 11. Formerly things pleased me which at present disgust me. 12. It appears that men forget that they have to die. 13. Do you not know to whom to sell your horse? 14. May ill luck be for me if from to-day on (*más*) I give advice to any one! 15. In my whole life I have not spoken to him; I do not know him. 16. Have you not been well? The whole night I have not been able to sleep.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF ALL THE IR- REGULAR AND THE PRINCIPAL DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Except the irregular participles *frito*, *preso*, *provisto*, and *roto*, all irregular participles are used as adjectives when there is a regular participle for the same verb.

(References are to sections.)

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p><i>abastecer</i>, see 150 [and 149
 <i>abnegar</i>, see <i>acertar</i>, 176, 177,
 <i>abolir</i>, see 219 (<i>a</i>)
 <i>aborrecer</i>, see 150 [reg.
 <i>abrir</i>, (p.p.) <i>abierto</i>, otherwise
 <i>absolver</i>, (p. p.) <i>absuelto</i>, see
 <i>mover</i>, 186
 <i>absonar</i>, see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 <i>absorver</i>, <i>absorvido</i>, <i>absorto</i>
 <i>abstenerse</i>, see <i>tener</i>, 174, 175
 <i>abstraer</i>,¹ see <i>traer</i>, 188
 <i>abuñolar</i>, see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 <i>acaecer</i>, see 202 (<i>a</i>) and 150
 <i>aceptar</i>, see <i>aceptado</i> and <i>acep-
 acertar</i>, see 176, 177 [to
 <i>aclocarse</i>, see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 and 149
 <i>acollar</i>, see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 <i>acontecer</i>, see 202 (<i>a</i>), 150
 <i>acordar</i>, see 178, 179
 <i>acornar</i>, see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 <i>acostar</i>, see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179</p> | <p><i>acrecentar</i>, see <i>acertar</i>, 176, 177
 <i>acrecer</i>, see 150
 <i>adecentar</i>, see <i>acertar</i>, 176, 177
 <i>adestrar</i>, see <i>acertar</i>, 176, 177
 <i>adherir</i>, see <i>sentir</i>, 203
 <i>adolecer</i>, see 150
 <i>adormecer</i>, see 150
 <i>adormir</i>, see <i>dormir</i>, 212
 <i>adquirir</i>, see 210
 <i>aducir</i>, see <i>conducir</i>, 205
 <i>advertir</i>, see <i>sentir</i>, 202
 <i>aficionarse</i>, <i>aficionado</i>, <i>afecto</i>
 <i>afjar</i> (obs.), <i>afjado</i> or <i>afijo</i>
 <i>afligir</i>, <i>afligido</i>, or <i>aficto</i>
 <i>afollar</i>, see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 <i>aforar</i>,² see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 <i>agorar</i>,³ see <i>acordar</i>, 178, 179
 <i>agradecer</i>, see 150
 <i>aguerrir</i>, see 219 (<i>a</i>)
 <i>aguzar</i> see <i>aguzado</i>, <i>agudo</i>
 <i>ahitarse</i>, <i>ahitado</i>, <i>ahito</i>
 <i>alebrarse</i>, see <i>acertar</i>, 176, 177</p> |
|--|---|

¹ *abstraer*, *abstraido*, *abstracto*. ² Reg. in sense of *to gauge*.

³ Takes diæresis in irregular forms.

- alentar**, see **acertar**, 176, 177
alertarse, **alertado**, **alerto**
aliquebrar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
almorzar, see **acordar**, 178, 179,
 and 149 [and 149
alongar, see **acordar**, 178, 179,
amanecer, see 150, 220
amoblar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
amolar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
amollecer, see 150
amorecer, see 150
amortecer, see 150
amover, see **mover**, 186
andar, see 180, 181
angostar, **angostado**, **angosto**
anochecer, see 150, 220
anteceder, see **decir**, 206
anteponer, see **poner**, 197
antever, see **ver**, 200
antojar, see 184 (b)
apacentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
aparecer, see 150
apercollar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
apernar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
apetecer, see 150
apostar,¹ see **acordar**, 178, 179
apretar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
aprobar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
argüir,² see **instruir**, 208
arrecirse, see **sentir**, 203
arrendar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
arrepentirse, see **sentir**, 203
ascender, see **atender**, 185
asentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
asentir, see **sentir**, 203
aserrar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
asir, see 211
asolar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
asoldar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
asonar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
asosegar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
astringir, (obs.) **astringo**, (obs.)
astrieto
atañer, see 202 (h), 152
atender, see 185
atenerse, see **tener**, 174, 175
atentar,³ see **acertar**, 176, 177
aterirse, see **sentir**, 203, 219 (a)
aterrar,⁴ see **acertar**, 176, 177
atestar,⁵ see **acertar**, 176, 177
atraer, see **traer**, 188
atravesar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
atribuir, see **instruir**, 208, 153
atronar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
avalentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
avanecerse, see 150
avenir, see **venir**, 209
aventar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
avergonzar,⁶ see 149
azolar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
bendecir, (p.p.) **bendecido**, **ben-**
dito, see **decir**, 206
bienquerer, see **querer**, 192

¹ Regular when it means *to post guards*.

² Loses diæresis before *y*.

³ Regular when meaning *to attempt crime*.

⁴ Regular in sense of *to terrify*.

⁵ When meaning *to cram*; otherwise regular.

⁶ Takes diæresis in irregular forms.

- blanquecer, see 150
 bregar, see acertar, 176, 177
 bruñir, see 152
 bullir, see 152
- caber, see 193
 caer, see 187
 calentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 canecer, see 150
 carecer, see 150
 cegar, see acertar, 176, 177, 149
 ceñir, see pedir, 204, 152
 cerner, see atender, 185
 cerrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 cimentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 circuir, see instruir, 208
 circuncidar, circuncidado, circunciso
 clarecer, see 150
 clocar, see acordar, 178, 179, 149
 cocer, see 189
 colar, see acordar, 178, 179
 colegir, see pedir, 204, 151
 colgar, see acordar, 178, 179, 149
 colorir, see 219 (a)
 combarse, combado, combo
 comedir, see pedir, 204
 comenzar, see acertar, 176, 177
 compadecer, see 150 [and 149
 comparecer, see 150
 compeler, compelido, compulso
 competir, see pedir, 204
 complacer, see 150
 complañir, see 152
 completar, completado, completo
 componer, see poner, 197
 comprender, comprendido, comp-
 preno [preso
 comprimir, comprimido, com-
- comprobar, see acordar, 178, 179
 concebir, see pedir, 204
 concernir, see 219 (b)
 concertar, see acertar, 176, 177
 concluir, (p.p.) concluido, con-
 cluso, see instruir, 208
 concordar, see acordar, 178, 179
 concretar, concretado, concreto
 condescender, see atender, 185
 condolerse, see mover, 186
 conducir, see 205
 conferir, see sentir, 203
 confesar, (p.p.) confesado, con-
 feso, see acertar, 176, 177
 confluir, see instruir, 208
 confundir, confundido, confuso
 conmoover, see mover, 186
 conocer, see 150
 conseguir, see pedir, 204, 151
 consentir, see sentir, 203
 consolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 consonar, see acordar, 178, 179
 constar, see 184 (b)
 constituir, see instruir, 208
 estreñir, see pedir, 204, 152
 construir, see instruir, 208
 consumir (-se), consumido, con-
 sumto
 contar, see acordar, 178, 179
 contender, see atender, 185
 contener, see tener, 174, 175
 contentar (-se), contendado,
 contento
 contorcerse, see cocer, 189
 contradecir, see decir, 206
 contraer, contraedo, contracto,
 see traer, 188

- contrahecer**, see **hacer**, 190
contraponer, see **poner**, 197
contravenir, see **venir**, 209
contribuir, see **instruir**, 208
controvertir, see **sentir**, 203
contundir, **contundido**, **contuso**
convalecer, see 150
convencer, **convencido**, **convicto**
convenir, see **venir**, 209
convertir, (p. p.) **convertido**,
converso, see **sentir**, 203
corregir, (p. p.) **corregido**, **cor-**
recto, see **pedir**, 204, 151
corroer, see 202 (*d*)
corromper, **corrompido**, **cor-**
rupto
corvar, **corvado**, **corvo**
costar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
crecer, see 150
crear, see 153
crestar, **crespado**, **crespo**
cruentar, (obs.) **cruentado**, (obs.)
cruento
cuadrar, **cuadrado**, **cuadro**
cubrir, **cubierto** (otherwise reg.)
cultivar, **cultivado**, **culto**

dar, see 182
decaer, see **caer**, 187
decentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
decir, see 206
decrecer, see 150
deducir, see **conducir**, 205
defender, see **atender**, 185
defenecer, see 150
deferir, see **sentir**, 203
degollar, see **agorar**, 113 (page)
- demoler**, see **mover**, 186
demostrar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
denegar, see **acertar**, 176, 177,
denegrecer, see 150 [and 149
denostar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
densar, **densado**, **denso**
dentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
deponer, see **poner**, 197
derrenegar, see **acertar**, 176,
177, 149 [177, 149
derrengar, see **acertar**, 176,
derretir, see **pedir**, 204
derrocar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
derruir, see **instruir**, 208
desabastecer, see 150
desacertar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desacollar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
desacordar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
desadormecer, see 150
desadvertir, see **sentir**, 203
desaferrar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desaforar,¹ see **acordar**, 178, 179
desagradecer, see 150
desalentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desamoblar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
desandar, see **andar**, 180, 181
desaparecer, see 150
desapretar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desaprobar, see **acordar**, 178, 179
desarrendar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desasentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desasir, see **asir**, 211
desasosegar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desatender, see **atender**, 185
desatentar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desaterrar, see **acertar**, 176, 177
desatraer, see **traer**, 188

¹ Regular when meaning *to redeem a heritage*.

- desatrasar, see acertar, 176,
 desavenir, see venir, 209 [177
 desaventar, see acertar, 176,
 desbastecer, see 150 [177
 desbravecer, see 150
 descabullirse, see 152
 descaecer, see 150
 descalzar, descalzado, descalzo
 descender, see atender, 185
 desceñir, see pedir, 204, 152
 descolgar, see acordar, 178,
 179, 149 [152
 descollar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 descomedirse, see pedir, 204
 descomponer, see poner, 197
 desconcertar, see acertar, 176,
 desconocer, see 150 [177
 desconsentir, see sentir, 203
 desconsolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 descontar, see acordar, 178, 179
 desconvenir, see venir, 209
 discordar, see acordar, 178, 179
 descornar, see acordar, 178, 179
 descrecer, see 150
 desdar, see dar, 183
 desdecir, see decir, 206
 desdentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desembebecerse, see 150
 desembellecer, see 150
 desembravecer, see 150
 desempedrar, see acertar, 176,
 desempobrecer, see 150 [177
 desencarecer, see 150
 desencerrar, see acertar, 176,
 177 [179
 desencordar, see acordar, 178,
 desencrucecer, see 150
 desencruelecer, see 150
 desenfurecerse, see 150
 desengrosar, see acordar, 178,
 desenmohecer, see 150 [179
 desenmudecer, see 150
 desensoberbecer, see 150
 desentenderse, see atender, 185
 desenterrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desentorpecer, see 150
 desentristecer, see 150
 desentumecer, see 150
 desenvolver, see 186
 desertar, desertado, desierto
 deservir, see pedir, 204
 desfallecer, see 150
 desfavorecer, see 150
 desferrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desflaquecerse, see 150
 desflocar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 desflorecer, see 150 [149
 desfortalecer, see 150
 desgobernar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desguarnecer, see 150
 deshacer, see hacer, 190
 deshelar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desherbar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desherrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 deshombrecerse, see 150
 deshumedecer, see 150
 desimponer, see poner, 197
 desinvernar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desleir, see reir, 207
 deslendar, see acertar, 176, 177
 deslucir, see 150
 desmajolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 desmarrirse, see 219 (a)
 desmedirse, see pedir, 204
 desmelar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desmembrar, see acertar, 176,
 desmentir, see sentir, 203 [177
 desmerecer, see 150

- desmullir, see 152
 desnegar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desnevar, see acertar (but im-
 personal)
 desnudar, desnudado, desnudo
 desobedecer, see 150
 desobstruir, see instruir, 208
 desoir, see oir, 216
 desolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 desoldar, see acordar, 178, 179
 desollar, see acordar, 178, 179
 desosar,¹ see acordar, 178, 179
 desovar,² see acordar, 178, 179
 desaparecer, see 150
 despavorir, see 219 (a)
 despedir, see pedir, 204
 despedrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desperecer, see 150
 despernar, see acertar, 176, 177
 despertar, (p.p.) despertado, des-
 pierto, see acertar, 176, 177
 despezar,³ see acertar, 176, 177,
 desplacer, see 150 [149
 desplegar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 and 149
 despoblar, see acordar, 178, 179
 desprobeer, (p.p.) desproveido,
 desprovisto, see creer, 153
 desteñir, see pedir, 204, 152
 destentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desterrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 destituir, see instruir, 208
 destorcer, see cocer, 189 [149
 destrocar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 destruir, see instruir, 208
 desvanecer, see 150
 desventar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desverdecer, see 150
 desvergonzarse,⁴ see 149
 desvolver, (p.p.) desvuelto, see
 mover, 186
 detener, see tener, 174, 175
 detraer, see traer, 188
 devolver, (p.p.) devuelto, see
 mover, 186
 dezmar, see acertar, 176, 177
 diferir, see sentir, 203
 difluir, see instruir, 208
 difundir, difundido, difuso
 digerir, see sentir, 203
 diluir, see instruir, 208
 dirigir, dirigido, directo
 discernir, see atender, 185
 discernir, see sentir, 203
 disconvenir, see venir, 209
 discordar, see acordar, 178, 179
 disentir, see sentir, 203
 disminuir, see instruir, 208
 disolver, (p.p.) disuelto, see
 mover, 186
 disonar, see acordar, 178, 179
 dispersar, dispersado, disperso
 despertar, see acertar, 176, 177
 desplacer, see 150
 disponer, see poner, 197
 distender, see atender, 185
 distinguir, distinguido, distinto
 distraer, see traer, 188

¹ Takes **h** in irregular forms; *not to dare*, regular.

² Takes **h** in irregular forms.

³ Regular when meaning *to make the end thinner (smaller)*.

⁴ Takes diæresis in irregular forms.

- distribuir, see instruir, 208
 divertir, see sentir, 203
 dividir, dividido, diviso
 doler, see mover, 186
 dormir, see 212

 educir, see conducir, 205
 elegir, elegido, electo, see pedir, 204, 151
 embair, see 219 (a)
 embarbecer, see 150
 embastecer, see 150
 embebecer, see 150
 embellecer, see 150
 embermejecer, see 150
 embestir, see pedir, 204
 emblandecer, see 150
 emblanquecer, see 150
 embobecer, see 150
 embosquecer, see 150
 embravecer, see 150
 embrutecer, see 150 [177
 emparentar, see acertar, 176,
 empedernir, see pedir, 204, also
 219 (a)
 empedrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 empellar, see acertar, 176, 177
 empequeñecer, see 150
 empezar, see acertar, 176, 177
 emplastecer, see 150
 emplumecer, see 150
 empobrecer, see 150
 empodrecer, see 150
 empoltronecerse, see 150
 emporcar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 enaltecer, see 150 [149
 enardecer, see 150
 encabellecerse, see 150
 encallecer, see 150
 encalvecer, see 150
 encandecer, see 150
 encanecer, see 150
 encarecer, see 150
 encarnecer, see 150
 encender, see atender, 185
 encentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 encerrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 enclocar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 encloquecer, see 150 [149
 encomendar, see acertar, 176,
 177
 encontrar, see acordar, 178, 179
 encorar, see acordar, 178, 179
 encordar, see acordar, 178, 179
 encorecer, see 150
 encornar, see acordar, 178, 179
 encovar, see acordar, 178, 179
 encrudecer, see 150
 encruelecer, see 150 [177
 encubertar, see acertar, 176,
 endentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 endentecer, see 150
 endurecer, see 150
 enfierecerse, see 150
 enflaquecer, see 150
 enfranquecer, see 150
 enfurecer, see 150
 engorar, see agorar
 engrandecer, see 150
 engreirse, see reir, 207
 engrosar, see acordar, 178, 179
 engrumecerse, see 150
 engullir, see 152
 enhambrecer, see 150 [177
 enhambrentar, see acertar, 176,
 enhestar, see acertar, 176, 177
 enjugar, enjugado, enjuto [149
 enlencar, see acertar, 176, 177,

- enlenteceer, see 150
 enloquecer, see 150
 enlucir, see 150
 enmagrecer, see 150
 enmalecer, see 150
 enmarillacerse, see 150
 enmelar, see acertar, 176, 177
 enmendar, see acertar, 176, 177
 enmerdar, see acertar, 176, 177
 enmohecer, see 150
 enmolecer, see 150
 enmudecer, see 150
 ennegrecer, see 150
 ennoblecer, see 150
 ennudecer, see 150
 enorgullecer, see 150
 enrarecer, see 150
 enriquecer, see 150
 enrobustecer, see 150
 enrodar, see acordar, 178, 179
 enrojecer, see 150
 enroñecer, see 150
 enronquecer, see 150
 enruinecerse, see 150
 ensalmar, see acordar, 178,
 ensandecer, see 150 [179
 ensangrentar, see acertar, 176,
 ensobrecer, see 150 [177
 ensñar, see acordar, 178, 179
 ensordecer, see 150
 entallecer, see 150
 entender, see atender, 185
 entenebreceer, see 150
 enterneceer, see 150
 enterrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 entigrecerse, see 150
 entontecer, see 150
 entorpecer, see 150
 entortar, see acordar, 178, 179
 entredecir, see decir, 206
 enteregerir, see sentir, 203
 entrelucir, see 150
 entremorir, see morir, 215
 entreoir, see oir, 216
 entrepereerse, see 150 [177
 entrepernar, see acertar, 176,
 entreponer, see poner, 197
 entretener, see tener, 174, 175
 entrever, see 200
 entristecer, see 150
 entullecer, see 150
 entumecer, see 150
 envanecer, see 150
 envejecer, see 150
 enverdecer, see 150
 envestir, see pedir, 204
 envilecer, see 150
 envolver,¹ see mover, 186
 enzurdecer, see 150
 equivaler. see valer, 199
 erigir, erigido, erecto
 erguir, see 213
 errar, see 184 (a)
 escabullirse, see 152
 escandecer, see 150 [177
 escarmentar, see acertar, 176,
 escarnecer, see 150
 esclarecer, see 150
 escocer, see cocer, 189
 escolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 escribir, (p.p.) escrito, other-
 wise regular [149
 esforzar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 espesar, espesado, espeso

¹ volver and its compounds have part. vuelto.

- establecer, see 150
 estar, see 166, 167
 estatuir, see instruir, 208
 estrechar, estrechado, estrecho
 estregar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 estremecer, see 150 [149
 estreñir, (p.p.) estreñado, es-
 tricto, see pedir, 204, 152
 exceptuar, exceptuado, excepto
 excluir, (p.p.) excluido, exclu-
 so, see instruir, 208
 excretar, excretado, excreto
 exentar, exentado, exento
 eximir, eximido, exento
 expedir, see pedir, 204
 expeler, expelido, expulso
 exponer, see poner, 197
 expresar, expresado, expreso
 extender, (p.p.) extendido, ex-
 tenso, see atender, 185
 extinguir, (p.p.) extinguido,
 extinto, see 157
 extraer, (p.p.) extraído, ex-
 tracto, see traer, 188
 extreñir, see pedir, 204, 152

 fallecer, see 150
 faltar, faltado, falto
 favorecer, see 150
 fechar, fechado, fecho
 fenecer, see 150
 ferrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 fijar, fijado, fijo
 fingir, fingido, ficto
 florecer, see 150
 fluir, see instruir, 208
 follar, see acordar, 178, 179
 fortalecer, see 150 [149
 forzar, see acordar, 178, 179,

 fregar, see acertar, 176, 177
 freir, (p.p.) freído and frito,
 see reir, 207

 gañir, see 152
 garantir, see 219 (a)
 gemecer, see 150
 gemir, see pedir, 204
 gobernar, see acertar, 176, 177
 gruir, see instruir, 208
 gruñir, see 152
 guañir, see 152
 guarecer, see 150
 guarnecer, see 150

 haber, see 157, 158, 159
 hacendar, see acertar, 176, 177
 hacer, see 190
 hartar, hartado, harto
 heder, see atender, 185
 helar, see acertar, 176, 177
 henchir, see pedir, 204, 152
 hender, see atender, 185
 heñir, see pedir, 204, 152
 herbar, see acertar, 176, 177
 herbecer, see 150
 herir, see sentir, 203
 herrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 hervir, see sentir, 203 [149
 holgar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 hollar, see acordar, 178, 178,
 huir, see instruir, 208 [149
 humedecer, see 150

 iludir, (obs.) iludido, (obs.) ilu-
 imbuir, see instruir, 208 [so
 impedir, see pedir, 204
 imponer, see poner, 197
 imprimir, imprimido, impreso

- improbar, see acordar, 178, 179
 improvisar, improvisado, im-
 proviso [149]
 incensar, see acertar, 176, 177
 incluir, incluido, incluso, see
 instruir, 208
 incurrir, incurrido, incurso
 indisponer, see poner, 197
 inducir, see conducir, 205
 infartar, infartado, infarto
 infectar, infectado, infecto
 inferir, see sentir, 203
 infernar, see acertar, 176, 177
 inficionar, inficionado, infecto
 influir, see instruir, 208
 infundir, infundido, infuso
 ingerir, (p.p.) ingerto, see sen-
 tir, 203.
 inhestar, see acertar, 176, 177
 injerir, (p.p.) injerido, injerto,
 see sentir, 203
 injertar, injertado, injerto
 inquirir, see adquirir, 210
 inscribir, inscribido, inscrito
 inseguir, see pedir, 204, 151
 insertar, insertado, inserto
 instituir, see instruir, 208
 instruir, see 208
 interdecir, see decir, 206
 interponer, see poner, 197
 interrumpir, interrumpido, in-
 terroto
 intervenir, see venir, 209
 introducir, see conducir, 205
 intrusarse, intrusado, intruso
 invernar, see acertar, 176, 177
 invertir, invertido, inverso, see
 sentir, 203
 investir, see pedir, 204
 ir, see 214
 jamerdar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 jimenzar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 jugar, see 183 [149]
 juntar, juntado, junto
 languidecer, see 150
 leer, see creer, 153
 limpiar, limpiado, limpio
 liquefacer, see satisfacer, 191
 llover, see mover, 186, 220
 lobreguecer, see 150
 lucir, see 150
 luir, see instruir, 208
 maldecir, (p.p.) maldecido, mal-
 dito, see decir, 206
 malherir, see sentir, 203
 malquerer, see querer, 192
 malquistar, malquistado, mal-
 quisto
 malsonar, see acordar, 178, 179
 maltraer, see traer, 188
 mancornar, see acordar, 178, 179
 manifestar, (p.p.) manifestado,
 manifiesto. see acertar, 176, 177
 manir, see 219 (a)
 mantener, see tener, 174, 175
 marchitar, marchitado, mar-
 chito
 mecer, see 150, exception
 medir, see pedir, 204
 melar, see acertar, 176, 177
 mentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 mentir, see sentir, 203
 merecer, see 150
 merendar, see acertar, 176, 177
 moblar, see acordar, 178, 179

LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS. 123

- mohecer, see 150
 moler, see mover, 186
 morder, see mover, 186
 morir, see 215
 mostrar, see acordar, 178, 179
 mover, see 186
 muir, see instruir, 208
 mullir, see 152
 muñir, see 152
- nacer, (p.p.) nacido, nato, see 150
 negar, see acertar, 176, 177, 149
 negreecer, see 150
 nevar, see acertar, 176, 177, 220
- obedecer, see 150
 obscurecer, see 150
 obstruir, see instruir, 208
 obtener, see tener, 174, 175
 ocultar, ocultado, oculto
 ofrecer, see 150
 oir, see 216
 oler, see 194
 omitir, omitido, omiso
 oponer, see poner, 197
 oprimir, oprimido, opreso
 orinecerse, see 150
 oscurecer, (p. p.) oscurecido,
 oscuro, see 150
- pacer, see 150, 202 (b)
 padecer, see 150
 palidecer, see 150
 parecer, see 150, 222 (a)
 pasar, pasado, paso
 pedir, see 204
 pensar, see acertar, 176, 177
 perder, see atender, 185
 perecer, see 150
- perfeccionar, perfeccionado, per-
 fecto
 permanecer, see 150 [(obs.)
 permitir, permitido, permiso
 perniquebrar, see acertar, 176,
 177
 perseguir, see pedir, 204, 151
 pertenecer, see 150
 pervertir, (p.p.) pervertido, per-
 verso, see sentir, 203
 pesar, see 184 (b)
 pimpollecce, see 150
 placer, see 195
 plañir, see 152
 plastecer, see 150
 plegar, see acertar, 176, 177, 149
 poblar, see acordar, 178, 179
 poder, see 196
 podreecer, see 150
 podrir, see 217
 polucionar, polucionado, poluto
 poner, see 197
 poseer, (p.p.) poseido, poseso.
 see creer, 153
 posponer, see poner, 197
 preconocer, see 150
 predecir, see decir, 206
 predisponer, see poner, 197
 preferir, see sentir, 203
 prelucir, see 150
 premorir, see morir, 215
 prender, prendido, preso
 preponer, see poner, 197
 prescribir, prescrito, pre-
 scrito
 presentir, see sentir, 203
 presumir, presumido, presunto
 presuponer, see poner, 197
 pretender, pretendido, pretenso

- preterir ¹
 prevalecer, see 150
 prevaler, see valer, 199
 prevenir, see venir, 209
 prever, see ver, 200
 probar, see acordar, 178, 179
 producir, see conducir, 205
 proferir, (p.p.) proferido, proferito (obs.), see sentir, 203
 profesar, profesado, profesado (obs.)
 promover, see mover, 186
 propender, propendido, propenso
 proponer, see poner, 197
 proscribir, proscrito, proscrito
 proseguir, see pedir, 204, 151
 prostituirse, (p.p.) prostituido, prostituto, see instruir, 208
 proveer, (p.p.) proveído, provisto, see creer, 153
 provenir, see venir, 209
 pudrir, see 217

 quebrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 querer, see 192

 raer, (p.p.) raido, raso, see 202 (c)
 ranciarse, ranciado, rancio
 rarefacier, (p.p.) rarefacido, rarefacto, see satisfacer, 191
 reagradecer, see 150
 reaparecer, see 150
 reapretar, see acertar, 176, 177
 reaventar, see acertar, 176, 177
 rebendecir, ² see decir, 206
 reblandecer, see 150

 rebullirse, see 152
 recaer, see caer, 187
 recalentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 receñir, see 152
 recentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 recluir, (p.p.) recludo, recluso, see instruir, 208
 recocer, see cocer, 189
 recolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 recoger, see pedir, 204, 151
 recomendar, see acertar, 176, 177
 recomponer, see poner, 197
 reconducir, see conducir, 205
 reconocer, see 150
 reconstruir see instruir, 208
 recontar, see acordar, 178, 179
 reconvalecer, see 150
 reconvenir, see venir, 209
 recordar, see acordar, 178, 179
 recostar, see acordar, 178, 179
 recrecer, see 150
 recrudecer, see 150
 redarguir, ³ see instruir, 208
 redoler, see mover, 186
 reducir, see conducir, 205
 reelegir, see pedir, 204, 151
 reencomendar, see acertar, 176
 referir, see sentir, 203 [177
 reflejar, reflejado, reflejo
 reflorcer, see 150
 refluir, see instruir, 208 [149
 reforzar, see acordar, 178, 179
 refregar, see acertar, 176, 177
 refreir, (p.p.) refreído, refrito, see reir, 207
 refringir, refringido, refracto

¹ Law-term and defective verb. ² See also bendecir of this list.

³ Loses diæresis before y.

- regañir, see 152
 regar, see acertar, 176, 177
 regimentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 regir, see pedir, 204, 151
 rigoldar,¹ see acordar, 178, 179
 regruñir, see 152
 rehacer, see hacer, 190
 rehenchir, see pedir, 204, 152
 reherir, see sentir, 203
 reherrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 rehervir, see sentir, 203
 rehollar, see acordar, 178, 179
 rehuir, see instruir, 208
 rehumedecer, see 150
 reir, see 207
 rejuvenecer, see 150
 relentecer, see 150 [150
 relentecer, see relentecer, also
 relucir, see 150
 remaldecir, see decir, 206
 remanecer, see 150 [204
 remedir, see medir, also pedir,
 remendar, see acertar, 176, 177
 rementir, see sentir, 203
 remolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 remolér, see mover, 186
 remorder, see mover, 186
 remover, see mover, 186
 remullir, see 152
 renacer, see 150
 rendir, see pedir, 204
 renegar, see acertar, 176, 177
 reñir, see 152, 204
 renovar, see acordar, 178, 179
 repacer, see 150, 202 (b)
 repadecer, see 150
 repedir, see pedir, 204
 repensar, see acertar, 176, 177
 repetir, see pedir, 204
 replegar, see acertar, 176, 177
 repletar, repletado, repleto
 repoblar, see acordar, 178, 179
 repodrir, see podrir, 217
 reponer, see poner, 197, 202 (e)
 reprobar, see acordar, 178, 179
 reproducir, see conducir, 205
 repudrir, see pudrir, 217
 requebrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 requerer, see querer, 192
 requerir, see sentir, 203
 resaber, see saber, 198
 resalir, see salir, 218
 resegar, see acertar, 176, 177
 resemmbrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 resentirse, see sentir, 203
 resolver, (p.p.) resuelto, see
 mover, 186
 resollar, see acordar, 178, 179
 resonar, see acordar, 178, 179
 resplandecer, see 150
 resquebrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 restablecer, see 150
 restituir, see instruir, 208 [149
 restregar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 restringir, restringido, restricto
 restriñir, see 152
 retallecer, see 150
 retemblar, see acertar, 176, 177
 retener, see tener, 174, 175
 retentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 reteñir, see 152, 204
 retiñir, see 152
 retoñecer, see 150
 retorcer, see cocer, 189

¹ Takes diæresis in irregular forms.

- retostar, see acordar, 178, 179
 retraer, see traer, 188
 retribuir, see instruir, 208
 retronar, see acordar, 178, 179
 retrotraer, see traer, 188
 revejecer, see 150
 revenirse, see venir, 209
 reventar, see acertar, 176, 177
 rever, see ver, 200
 reverdecer, see 150
 reverter, see atender, 185
 revestir, see pedir, 204
 revolver, see acordar, 178, 179
 revolcarse, see acordar, 178, 179,
 149 [mover, 186
 revolver, (p.p.) revuelto, see
 rizar, rizado, rizo
 robustecer, see 150
 rodar, see acordar, 178, 179
 roer, see 202 (*d*)
 rogar, see acordar, 178, 179, 149
 romper, rompido, roto

 saber, see 198
 salir, see 218
 salpimentar, see acertar, 178, 179
 salpresar, salpresado, salpreso
 salpullir, see 152
 salvar, salvado, salvo
 salve, see 202 (*f*)
 sarmentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 sarpullir, see 152
 satisfacer, see 191
 secar, secado, seco
 seducir, see conducir, 205
 segar, see acertar, 176, 177
 seguir, see pedir, 204, 151
 selegir, selegido, selecto
 sembrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 sementar, see acertar, 176, 177
 sentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 sentir, see 203
 sepultar, sepultado, sepulto
 ser, see 164, 165
 serrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 servir, see pedir, 204 [149
 simenzar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 situar, situado, sito
 sobrecrecer, see 150
 sobreentender, see atender, 185
 sobrentender, see atender, 185
 sobreponer, see poner, 197
 sobresalir, see salir, 218 [177
 sobresembrar, see acertar, 176,
 sobresolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 sobrevenir, see venir, 209
 sobreventar, see acertar, 176, 177
 sobrevertirse, see atender, 185
 sobrevestir, see sentir, 203
 sofreir, (p.p.) sofreido, sofrito,
 see reir, 207
 solar, see acordar, 178, 179
 soldar, see acordar, 178, 179
 soler, see 202 (*g*)
 sollar, see acordar, 178, 179
 soltar, (p.p.) soltado, suelto,
 see acordar, 178, 179 [186
 solver, (p.p.) suelto, see mover,
 somover, see mover, 186
 sonar, see acordar, 178, 179
 soñar, see acordar, 178, 179
 sonreir, see reir, 207
 sonrodarse, see acordar, 178, 179
 sorregar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 149 [149
 sosegar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 sostener, see tener, 174, 175
 soterrar, see acertar, 176, 177
 subarrendar, see acertar, 176,
 177

- subentender, see atender, 185
 subseguir, see pedir, 204, 151
 substituir, see instruir, 208
 substraer, see traer, 188
 subtender, see atender, 185
 subvenir, see venir, 209
 subvertir, see sentir, 203
 suceder, see 202 (a)
 sugerir, see sentir, 203
 sujetar, sujetado, sujeto
 superponer, see poner, 197
 supervenir, see venir, 209
 suponer, see poner, 197
 suprimir, suprimido, supreso
 surgir, surgido, surto
 suspender, suspendido, suspenso
 sustituir, (p.p.) sustituido, sustituto, see instruir, 208
 sustraer, see traer, 188

 tallecer, see 150
 tañer, see 202 (h)
 temblar, see acertar, 176, 177
 tender, (p.p.) tendido, tenso, see atender, 185
 tener, see 174, 175
 teñir, (p.p.) teñido, tinto, see pedir, 204, 152
 tentar, see acertar, 176, 177
 torcer, (p.p.) torcido, tuerto, see cocer, 189, 150
 tostar, see acordar, 178, 179
 traducir, see conducir, 205
 traer, see 188
 transcender, see atender, 185
 transfregar, see acertar, 176,
 translucirse, see 150 [177, 149
 transponer, see poner, 197
 trascender, see atender, 185
 trascolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 trascordarse, see acordar, 178,
 179 [149
 trasegar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 trasferir, see sentir, 203
 trasfregar, see acertar, 178,
 traslucir, see 150 [179, 149
 trasoír, see oír, 216
 trasoñar, see acordar, 178, 179
 trasponer, see poner, 197 [149
 trastrocar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 trasverter, see atender, 185
 trasvolar, see acordar, 178, 179
 travesar, see acertar, 176, 177
 trocar, see acordar, 178, 179, 149
 tronar, see acordar, 178, 179, 220
 tropezar, see acertar, 176, 177,
 tullir, see 152 [149
 tumefacerse, see satisfacer, 191

 vaciar, vaciado, vacío
 valer, see 199
 venir, see 209
 ventar, see acertar, 176, 177
 ver, see 200
 verdecer, see 150
 verter, see atender, 185
 vestir, see pedir, 204
 volar, see acordar, 178, 179
 volcar, see acordar, 178, 179,
 149 [186
 volver, (p.p.) vuelto, see mover,

 yacer, see 201
 yuxtaponer, see poner, 197

 zabullir, see 152
 zafarse, zafado, zafo
 zaherir, see sentir, 203
 zambullirse, see 152

LESSON XXIV.

USE OF THE TENSES. SIMPLE TENSES.

225. The simple tenses are preferred to the compound in many cases where the latter would be used in English: as, *I have read, I do not know where; yo leí no sé donde. I have met him this morning, and have come to an agreement with him about the affair; le encontré esta mañana, y traté con él del asunto. It has been five years since I was in Madrid; hace cinco años que estuve en Madrid.*

226. (a) The present tense of the indicative expresses in Spanish, as in English, *what exists, happens, or is being done*: as, *el es coronel; ella se levanta tarde; la luna acompaña á la tierra.* (b) The progressive present (*am writing, etc.*) is rendered in Spanish by *estar* with present participle: as, *estoy escribiendo; están leyendo.*

227. The English emphatic present (*do write, etc.*) does not admit of a literal translation into Spanish; but instead, the verb is sometimes modified by an adverb: as, *canta muy bien, de véras (really); she does sing very well. Sí lo creo, I do believe it.*

228. (a) When the auxiliary *do* is used for a verb previously expressed, the affirmative *sí* or the negative *no* is used for *do* in Spanish, provided *do* and its preceding verb are of the same number and person: as, *él no se queja, pero ella sí; he does not complain, but she does. V. no le conoce, pero nosotros le conocemos; you do not know him, but we do.*

(b) *Do*, not as an auxiliary but a principal verb, is *hacer*. as, **Harélo que V. me manda**, *I will do what you order me to do*.

229. The present is sometimes (not frequently) used for a near future: as, **viene al instante**; **partimos mañana**.

230. The present (historical) is sometimes used for the preterite: as, **llega Cortes y habla á los suyos**.

231. (a) The imperfect tense denotes a progressive (continuing) or repeated past action or state: as, **iba muy á menudo al concierto, cuando estaba en Paris**.

(b) This tense often denotes a state continuing, or an action going on, when something else happened to interrupt it; and **estar**, with present participle, is often used for the simple imperfect tense: as, **Andrés leía** (or **estaba leyendo**) **cuando entré**, *Andrew was reading when I entered*.

(c) The imperfect tense is used in describing the permanent qualities of persons and things; hence is called the descriptive tense: as, **los Romanos eran grandes guerreros**. (d) Parenthetical or explanatory remarks in a narrative are expressed by the imperfect: as, **sentóse bajo un sauce é imitó su ejemplo otro moro que le acompañaba**, etc.

(e) The imperfect sometimes takes the place of the conditional: as, **si le hubiera dicho la verdad, me exponía á un regaño**, *if I had told him the truth I should have exposed myself to a scolding*. (f) For the emphatic form *did*, see *do*, 227 and 228. **VV. no le vieron, pero yo le ví**, *you did not*, etc.; **VV. no le vieron, pero ellos sí** (*they did*).

232. (a) The preterite tense refers to an entirely past action or state, and hence is called the historical tense: as, **fui** (*I went*) **al concierto anoche**; **los Romanos conquistaron á la Bretaña**. (b) When an action or state is broken in upon by something else, that which interrupts is put in the preterite tense: as, **mientras yo revolvía el asador** (*spit*), **él dispuso la mesa**. **¿Dónde estabas, cuando pregunté por tí?**

VOCABULARY XXIV.

el asador, <i>spit (stick)</i> .	la vista, <i>prospect</i> .
asalto, <i>assault</i> .	atrever (-se), <i>to venture</i> .
bosque, <i>woods</i> .	componer, <i>to compose</i> .
cateto, <i>side of right angle</i> .	correr, <i>to run</i> .
clásico, <i>classic</i> .	democrático, <i>democratic</i> .
coronel, <i>colonel</i> .	erudito, <i>learned</i> .
cuadrado, <i>square</i> .	girar, <i>to turn</i> .
ejemplo, <i>example</i> .	herir, <i>to wound</i> .
estrago, <i>ravage</i> .	igual, <i>equal</i> .
exponer, <i>to expose</i> .	imitar, <i>to imitate</i> .
guerrero, <i>warrior</i> .	intentar, <i>to attempt</i> .
indicio, <i>indication</i> .	magnífico, <i>magnificent</i> .
lecho, <i>bed</i> .	á mediados, <i>about the midst of</i> .
moro, <i>moor</i> .	percebir, <i>to perceive</i> .
regañó, <i>scolding</i> .	pintar (-se), <i>to paint</i> .
sauce, <i>willow</i> .	á principios, <i>early</i> .
viento, <i>wind</i> .	prorumpir, <i>to break forth</i> .
la abuela, <i>grandmother</i> .	quejar (-se), <i>to complain</i> .
cuesta, <i>hill</i> .	al rededor, <i>about</i> .
epidemia, <i>epidemic</i> .	rondar, <i>to go round</i> .
hipotenusa, <i>hypotenuse</i> .	solicito, <i>solicitous</i> .
mirada, <i>glance</i> .	soplar, <i>to blow</i> .
mocedad, <i>youth</i> .	subir, <i>to ascend, mount</i> .
salida, <i>exit</i> .	tender (-se), <i>to stretch (one's self)</i> .
suavidad, <i>gentleness</i> .	de veras, <i>really</i> .
suma, <i>sum (amount)</i> .	viajar, <i>to travel</i> .

EXERCISE XXIV.

1. El gobierno de los Estados Unidos es democrático. 2. Hace ocho días que rondan la calle donde vivo. 3. Yo estoy viajando y mi amigo está componiendo una obra. 4. Corre á la puerta, se la hace abrir y halla á su amigo herido. 5. Nosotros nos vamos mañana y ellos salan el día despues. 6. Ella ha es-

crito y viene aquí, su hermana 'va allí. 7. ¿Puedo yo contar con (*upon it*) que V. vendrá? Voy al instante. 8. Cuando percibí á mi hermano corrí al instante á él. 9. En sus miradas pintabanse¹ la amistad más solícita, y el interés más vivo. 10. Iba todos los dias á la librería; fué á la librería ayer. 11. Cervantes nació á mediados del siglo diez y seis; y murió á principios del diez y siete. 12. Llegué á Londres en el año de 1838; ¿no es verdad? 13. No se atrevieron los enemigos á subir la cuesta. 14. Copérnico probó que la tierra giraba al rededor del sol. 15. Cuando tú recorrías la Francia estaba yo en Italia. 16. Mientras que refería sus desgracias, prorumpieron en lágrimas. 17. A la salida de Viena aun seguía haciendo estragos la epidemia.

THEME XXIV.

1. Good-day, sir; how long have you been in Madrid?
2. The square on (of) the hypotenuse is equal to the sum of the squares on the other two sides.
3. They were going when we were coming.
4. He is a man that likes and does not like the same person.
5. They write that they are selling everything that they have.
6. Some learned men are translating the Latin classics.
7. Men are speaking of war, and yet they desire peace.
8. The general armed himself, mounted his horse, and sallied forth.
9. When I was in Vienna, I went to the concert every evening.
10. I called to the servants, who were still in bed.
11. I used to travel much when I was younger.
12. I knew Mr.

¹ These were painted (descriptive), or used to be painted.

Benot, but they did not know him. 13. The enemy (-ies) did not give any indication of attempting the assault. 14. The wind blew gently (with gentleness), and the heavens presented a magnificent prospect. 15. The ancients used to stretch themselves on couches at the table. 16. His grandmother was very beautiful in her youth. 17. The woods, says Galatea, were formerly my companions.

LESSON XXV.

SIMPLE TENSES CONCLUDED AND COMPOUND TENSES.

233. (a) The future tense indicates that something will exist or take place in the future: as, **el será elegido; enviaré la carta mañana.** (b) The future expresses a mild command: as, **no dirás de esto nada á nadie.** (c) The future is sometimes used instead of the present when doubt is implied: as, **vendrá (he comes) quizá, para amenazarme.** (d) The future is sometimes used for the present or past in questions where a contradictory reply is not expected: as, **¿habrá disgracia mayor que la mia?**

(e) When *shall* and *will* are not signs of the future they must be translated by equivalent verbs: as, *will you lend me your penknife?* **¿quiere V. prestarme su cortaplumas?**; *it shall be as I say,* **ha de ser como digo.** (f) *Shall* and *will* used as substitutes for the verbs they represent must be treated as *do* (see 227, 228): as, *I shall not proceed, but he will;* **yo no procederé, pero él procederá.**

234. (a) The compound¹ of the present (perfect

¹ Very frequent in letters.

tense) represents a past action or state of being as completed at the present time. *I have written to him three times this week, le he escrito tres veces esta semana.* **Han anunciado para hoy una comedia muy buena.** (b) This tense often denotes an action or state in a period of time of which the present forms a part, and so used; *to-day, this week, etc.*, are often added, see 234 (a).

(c) Note that **tener** is sometimes (with transitive verbs) used as auxiliary instead of **haber**: as, *las cartas que tiene escritas; como yo tengo dicho; limpiáronle el rostro que cubierto de polvo tenía.* (d) The progressive form is used, but the time of the state or action must be expressed or easily understood: as, *¿dónde ha estado V. escribiendo esta mañana?*

235. The compound of the imperfect (or pluperfect tense) represents a state or action as completed in some indefinite period before another action or state expressed or easily understood: as, *ya había oído la noticia; había hablado V. al médico (at the time we are speaking of).*

236. The compound of the preterite (past anterior tense) represents a state or action as completed in some tolerably definite period before another state or action expressed or easily understood (and words, as **cuando, despues de, etc.**, are always used with this tense): as, *apénas me hubo visto, cuando me llamó.*

237. The compound of the future (or future perfect tense) bears the same relation to the future that the compounds of the imperfect and preterite do to these tenses: as, *habré acabado, esta noche; ya habra oído muchas veces decir, etc., you will often have heard said.*

VOCABULARY XXV.

el capitán, <i>captain.</i>	avisar, <i>to inform.</i>
hospital, <i>hospital.</i>	cubrir, <i>to cover.</i>
huérfano, <i>orphan.</i>	desaparecer, <i>to disappear.</i>
julio, <i>July.</i>	escapar (-se), <i>to run off.</i>
mensajero, <i>messenger.</i>	exclamar, <i>to exclaim.</i>
mérito, <i>merit.</i>	franco, <i>frank.</i>
orden, <i>order (m. & f.)</i>	horroroso, <i>frightful.</i>
reinado, <i>reign.</i>	humilde, <i>humble.</i>
ruego, <i>request.</i>	leal, <i>loyal.</i>
temporal, <i>storm.</i>	limpiar, <i>to clean.</i>
la constancia, <i>constancy.</i>	primoroso, <i>fine.</i>
fuerza, <i>force.</i>	proceder, <i>to proceed.</i>
maravilla, <i>wonder.</i>	quizá, <i>perhaps.</i>
súplica, <i>petition.</i>	superar, <i>to surpass</i>
tarea, <i>task.</i>	terminar, <i>to terminate.</i>
amenazar, <i>to threaten.</i>	

EXERCISE XXV.

1. Señores, hemos visto muchas maravillas en este siglo. 2. ¡Qué palabras hallaremos que no se hayan ya usado! 3. ¿Serviremos de ruegos y de humildes súplicas? 4. ¿Se habrá visto cosa, más primorosa en este mundo? 5. (La) España produjo grandes hombres en los reinados de Carlos I, y Felipe II. 6. Cuando vuelva á mi país habrá cambiado sin duda el orden de cosas que allí dejé. 7. Había acabado de almorzar ántes que él viniera. 8. No bien hube acabado de escribir cuando entré ella. 9. Muchas obras de mérito han sido escritas durante el presente siglo. 10. No le he visto hoy, ni en todo este mes de julio. 11. Fingió creer que todo aquello era suyo y que yo se lo había quitado. 12. La mujer conoció que me

había escapado del hospital de huérfanos. 13. Ya habré terminado la tarea cuando llegue el verano. 14. Á los capitanes tengo avisado lo que han de hacer. 15. Hace cuatro años que él está aquí en el ejército. 16. Había (*or* hacia) dos horas que yo estaba escribiendo cuando llegó mi padre.

THEME XXV.

1. Rome made herself mistress of the world; England has made herself mistress of the sea. 2. He was in the city yesterday, but he has returned to the country to-day. 3. Greece produced great orators and poets, Spain has produced great men. 4. I had almost believed that his conduct was frank and loyal. 5. He encountered many and grave difficulties in his undertaking, but by force of constancy he had overcome them all. 6. She will wait for her father here, but I shall not. 7. To-morrow at this hour we shall have learned the news. 8. I had already received his letter when I wrote mine. 9. This year the storms in the Mediterranean have been frightful. 10. Thus is named he whom I have (hold) mentioned in my letter. 11. Oh, Heaven! I exclaimed, is there a condition more wretched than mine? 12. Next week we shall have lived together six months. 13. He has been in the United States for these five years. 14. His father died two years ago, and I have not seen him since. 15. The clouds had almost disappeared when it began to rain. 16. I had been waiting an hour when the messenger arrived.

LESSON XXVI.

THE IMPERATIVE MOOD. THE CONDITIONAL MOOD.

238. (a) The imperative mood is used to express commanding, exhorting, entreating, or permitting¹: as, **confieselo V.**; **que ella vaya**; **venga V.**; **vamos**.

(b) The imperative forms proper are the second persons singular and plural (as, **ama, amad**; **come, comed**; **recibe, recibid**, etc.), which cannot be used with a negative. For all persons except the second singular and plural, and for these when negative, the subjunctive is used for the imperative: as, **dice, decid**; **no digas, no digais**; **diga V.**, **digamos, que digan, digan VV.**, **no diga V.**, etc.

(c) Note that *let* (as sign of imperative) with third person may be translated by **que**: as, **que digan**, *let them say*. (d) The future of the indicative is sometimes used for the imperative, see 233 (b). (e) The infinitive with **á** sometimes has the force of the imperative: as; **á ver**, *let us see*.

239. (a) When the conditional mood is used, a condition is usually expressed or understood in the sentence, the conditional mood being used in the conclusion and some conjunction (frequently **si**²) being generally used in the condition: as, **iría con V. si**

¹ Also a wish: as, **sea su nombre bendito**, *may his name be blessed*. Thus used even the first person singular is found: as, **viva él y viva yo**, *may he and I live*.

² **Si**, meaning *whether*, is followed by the conditional mood: as, **no sé si me lo concedería ó no**.

tuviese (or tuviera) dinero; si tuviese (or tuviera) dinero iría con V; ;daría todo lo que tengo para verle! (b) The conjunction that naturally introduces a conditional sentence cannot be omitted at will as in English: as, si tuviere papel, escribiría una carta; we cannot say tuviera papel, etc. (c) When the principal verb¹ of the sentence denotes supposition, hope, fear, promise or affirmation, and precedes the conjunction que¹, the conditional may be used: as, pensaba que su criado acudiría á la hora señalada. (d) A modest request or wish is often expressed by the conditional mood: as, desearía ver los muebles en casa de V., but querer (in subj.) is more usual. If, however, an interjection is used, the conditional cannot be: as, ojalá no le hubiera (or hubiere) yo conocido. (e) The conditional is often used in modest, approximate, or uncertain statements: as, serían las diez de la noche. (f) It is also used in interrogative expressions of politeness (see d); and of doubt, concerning possibility or fitness: as, ¿me atrevería yo á pedir? ¿sería verdad? (g) In indirect quotations after verbs in the past or conditional, the conditional is used: as, dijo que vendría.

(h) *Could*, when a condition is expressed or implied, is rendered by the conditional of poder: as, yo podría ir si quisiera. (i) *Might*, expressing power or ability, is also rendered by the conditional of poder: as, el podría venir, si quisiera. (j) *Should*, meaning *ought to*, is rendered by the conditional of deber: as, V. debería venir conmigo. (k) The preposition á, followed by an infinitive, is sometimes used to form a conditional sentence: as, á ser cierta la noticia, me alegraría mucho; si fuese cierta la noticia, me alegraría mucho.

¹ Not always expressed.

VOCABULARY XXVI.

el canto, <i>singing.</i>	acudir { <i>to come (to help).</i>
crédito, <i>credit.</i>	{ <i>to come (by appointment).</i>
delirante, <i>raver.</i>	afirmar, <i>to affirm.</i>
delito, <i>crime.</i>	avenir, <i>to agree, to join.</i>
extravío, <i>frenzy.</i>	cometer, <i>to commit.</i>
favor, <i>favor.</i>	contentar, <i>to content.</i>
idioma, <i>language.</i>	hebréo, <i>Hebrew.</i>
individuo, <i>individual, person.</i>	inevitable, <i>inevitable.</i>
marroquí, <i>morocco leather.</i>	jurar, <i>to swear.</i>
mueble, <i>furniture.</i>	navegar, <i>to navigate.</i>
plato, <i>dish.</i>	ofrecer, <i>to offer.</i>
la aldea, <i>hamlet.</i>	osar, <i>to dare.</i>
cadena, <i>chain.</i>	permitir, <i>to permit.</i>
chinela, <i>slipper.</i>	radical, <i>radical.</i>
nave, <i>ship.</i>	vano, <i>vain.</i>
ocasion, <i>occasion.</i>	

EXERCISE XXVI.

1. Permítame V. que diga lo que he oído sobre eso.
2. No vaya V. tarde, es preciso que V. esté allí temprano.
3. Los individuos que deseen aprender el idioma hebréo acudirán á la calle de D.
4. Ama á tu prójimo, como á tí mismo.
5. Leería los libros que están aquí, si tuviera el tiempo.
6. Aun cuando me hubiera ofrecido otro tanto, yo no iría.
7. Si yo tuviese una casa de campo, viviría siempre en ella.
8. Puesto (*caso*) que durmiese, y no despertase; en vano sería mi canto.
9. Si V. se hubiese levantado más temprano, habría almorzado con nosotros.
10. No fuí tan simple, que tomase el camino de Toledo; porque (*by which*) me expondría á encontrarme con él.
11. Desearía un par de chinelas y las quisiera en (de)

marroquí. 12. Con todo eso, osaría afirmar y jurar que son radicales. 13. Tendría en aquel tiempo la ciudad sesenta mil vecinos. 14. ¿Es posible que los extravíos de un delirante, cuya razon evidentemente desconcertaría la proximidad de la muerte, hayan encontrado crédito? 15. ¿Debería yo dar ocasion á que cometirse otros nuevos delitos?

THEME XXVI.

1. The war is inevitable, and let it come! I repeat it, let it come! 2. Do not suffer that they betray you with promises. 3. Do me the favor to tell me where the doctor lives. 4. Speak to this man; and ask him what you wish. 5. He would certainly be [the] son of a grandee, if this had been in his power. 6. I would have given him the watch and the chain, if he merited them. 7. If I had known that you were not at home, I would not have come. 8. He would have much more wealth (-s), if he had not spent it (them) in voyages. 9. I would have invited him, if he understood the German language. 10. It seems to me that we would not agree badly living together. 11. I would content myself with any (whatever) of these dishes. 12. It was about two o'clock in the afternoon, when they reached the village. 13. They might have sailed two hours when they discovered a powerful ship. 14. Would you have the kindness to tell me where the post [office] is? 15. The gentleman said that you might know the truth, if you wished. 16. Could you find your way in the city without me?

muchas
mas
equivocas
de off
de of
mas cond

amable

LESSON XXVII.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

240. (a) The subjunctive mood in independent sentences expresses command, exhortation, wish, concession, uncertainty: as, **págueseme lo que se me debe; hágame V. el favor; sepamos cuál es más loco; venga esta dueña y pida lo que quisiere; viva él y viva yo; salga lo que saliere** (*come what may*). (b) The subjunctive in independent sentences is really used as an imperative, see 238 and Exercise XXVI.

241. The subjunctive mood is used in dependent sentences whose meaning is represented rather as a conception than a reality; and which are connected (either as subject or object) with the principal sentence¹ by **que**²; or as object by an interrogative pronoun or conjunction.

Note the following: **aunque estaba allí** (ind.); **aunque estuviese allí** (subj.); *though he was there* (sure); *though he might be there* (doubtful); **aunque viene hoy, no le veré** (*he surely comes*); **aunque viniese hoy, no le vería** (*coming not sure*).

242. This dependent subjunctive is used: (a) After expressions that deny or question the reality or possibility of the statement in the dependent sentence: as, **no es verdad que lo haya dicho. ¿Es verdad que lo haya dicho? Dudo que venga; dudé que viniese** (but **no dudo que vendrá**); **no dudo que seas mi amigo**. (b) After expressions (that represent the statement in the dependent sentence as a subject) of fear, hope, or

¹ Sometimes understood or placed after the subjunctive.

² Generally **que** or a compound of **que**, rarely others.

expectation : as, **temía descubriese la trampa ; esperando se cumpla el número del vapuleo** ; but **temo** (*I fear = I am sure*) **no ha de llegar el día.** (c) After expressions (that represent the statement in the dependent sentence as a subject) of command, wish, concession, etc. : as, **guardáos de que no os engañen ; conjúrote que me digas quien eres ; concedo que todo lo que dices sea verdad.** (d) After expressions of feeling, emotion, etc. : as, **le agradeceré á V. que me dé un poco de papel ; me alegraría de que él viniese (viniera).** (e) After impersonal expressions, representing what follows them as an idea or conception of the speaker or writer : as, **lo mejor es que no corran ; es necesario que vaya.** (f) Generally after **saber** used negatively or interrogatively : as, **no sé qué diga.** (g) Sometimes after **decir**¹ and in some other constructions, where we might expect the conditional : as, **dijo que lo hiciera, si no fuera prohibido** : but the subjunctive of indirect statement is not a regular Spanish construction : as, **dije, pensé (dijo, pensó) que era verdad.** (h) After verbs of causing, occasioning, accomplishing, etc. : as, **consigues que seas respetado** : but after such followed by **de manera que, de suerte que, or tan** made prominent, the result must be a future one to be expressed by the subjunctive : as, **se porta de manera que es amado de todos ; pórtate de manera que seas amado de todos.**

243. DISTINCTION IN USE BETWEEN FIRST (ending in *ra*) AND SECOND (ending in *se*) IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.—(a) When the imperfect subjunctive is preceded by **si, con tal que, cuando**, or by an interjection expressing desire, either the first or the second subjunctive may be used : as, **si tuviera, or tu-**

¹ See under conditional mood.

viese, dinero compraría libros ; ojalá fuera, or fuese cierto. (b) In cases similar to these in (a), but without the conjunction, either the first subjunctive or the conditional is used : as, de buena gana saliera, or saldría. [NOTE.—From (a) and (b) it follows that *ra* (1st subj.) may sometimes take the place of *se* (2d subj.) or of *ría* (conditional), but that *se* and *ría* differ.] (c) *Se* is generally used if a relative pronoun precedes: as, premiaré á todos los que hubiesen hecho su deber. (d) *Ra* is generally used in exclamations : as, quién lo hubiera pensado ! or, habría pensado ! (e) Partial list of impersonal expressions generally taking the subjunctive mood after them :

es necesario	es malo	conviene
es preciso	es justo	estar (es) bien
es menester	es injusto	es hora
es fuerza	es lástima	lo mejor es
es bueno	es vergüenza	ménos mal es, etc.

VOCABULARY XXVII.

el destino, <i>destiny</i> .	cumplir (-se), <i>to complete, fulfil.</i>
número, <i>number</i> .	desterrar, <i>to banish.</i>
perro, <i>dog</i> .	determinar, <i>to determine.</i>
puesto, <i>place, position</i> .	dudar, <i>to doubt.</i>
sacrificio, <i>sacrifice</i> .	espantar, <i>to frighten.</i>
uso, <i>use</i> .	fiar (-se), <i>to trust.</i>
vapuleo, <i>whipping</i> .	ladrar, <i>to bark.</i>
la burla, <i>jest, sport</i> .	loco, <i>foolish, simple.</i>
duda, <i>doubt</i> .	mantener, <i>to keep.</i>
dueña, <i>lady (married)</i> .	ojalá, <i>would that.</i>
las letras, <i>learning</i> .	permanecer, <i>to persist, remain.</i>
la patria, <i>native land</i> .	premiar, <i>to reward.</i>
trampa, <i>trap, fraud</i> .	prohibir, <i>to prohibit.</i>
advertir, <i>to inform</i> .	proseguir, <i>to pursue.</i>
agradecer, <i>to thank</i> .	respetar, <i>to respect.</i>
alcanzar, <i>to reach</i> .	separar, <i>to separate.</i>
aprear (-se), <i>to dismount</i> .	ya, <i>now.</i>
conjurar, <i>to entreat</i> .	

EXERCISE XXVII.

1. Ojalá la tierra se me abriera ántes que me viese puesto en esta condicion. 2. Sea el que fuere el uso que V. hiciere de mi papel, no dudo que lo aprobaré. 3. Aunque ladren los perros, no me despertarán en este cuarto. 4. Que no se espante V. de verme, que no se muera V. al (de) verme. 5. No puede ser que mi destino se separe del tuyo ó del suyo. 6. Tengo determinado que vaya V. por una parte del monte y yo por otra. 7. Mi amigo estaba contento con que (*when*) me hallase en casa. 8. Es hora que prosigamos nuestro camino—sale el sol. 9. Entré tan alegre como si supiera adonde había de ir á comer. 10. Te juro que si pudiera subir ó apearne (que) yo te hubiera vengado. 11. Aun cuando tratara (*or* *tatase*) de remediar el mal, etc. 12. Le advirtió que á cuanto ella le dijese, le respondiese (-ra). 13. Aunque me lo haya dicho el otro dia, no me acuerdo ya de ello. 14. Le hubiera ido á ver ayer, si hubiese sabido esta noticia. 15. Si permaneciere aquí algun tiempo se lo avisaré á V. 16. Si él hubiere dejado Granada ántes que le alcance mi carta, etc.

THEME XXVII.

1. Do not think that my destiny can ever be separated from thine. 2. Either it was to gain my confidence or to make fun of me. 3. That he may keep the place, I have made many sacrifices. 4. There is no doubt that you might be deceived by that letter. 5. Our destiny has not wished that we should die in our native land. 6. I did not wish (*imp.*) that any

101 24 242 (a)
242 (b)

one should know that I had money. 7. I am astonished to see that a man so without letters (education) says such things. 8. It is necessary that you know and do your task and your duty. 9. I do not know what I would do then; this I know, what I wish to do now. 10. It would be well that they should banish that old criminal. 11. I called him that he might go out with me. 12. There was no one in the city that trusted them. 13. I shall not return until they have delivered me the money. 14. He would have paid me, if he had had money at home. 15. I will bring you what (-ever) they may give me. 16. Even if he should have written him before he (might) arrive, etc.

LESSON XXVIII.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD IN DEPENDENT SENTENCES (CONTINUED). SEQUENCE OF TENSES.

244. The subjunctive mood is used after certain conjunctions. The important ones used with the subjunctive are ¹ :

<i>á fin de que, to the end that.</i>	<i>como quiera que, notwithstanding.</i>
<i>á ménos que, unless.</i>	<i>como si, as if.</i>
<i>ántes que, before.</i>	<i>con tal que, provided that.</i>
<i>apénas, scarcely.</i>	<i>cual si, as if.</i>
<i>así que, so that.</i>	<i>cuando, when.</i>
<i>aunque, although.</i>	<i>dado que, granted that.</i>
<i>bien que, although.</i>	<i>en caso de que, in case that.</i>
<i>como, as, when.</i>	<i>en vez de que, instead of.</i>

¹ The same conjunction will be followed by the indicative or subjunctive mood according to the sense in which it is used, see 241.

hasta que, *until*.
 hasta donde, *as far as*.
 luego que, *as soon as*.
 mientras, *while*.
 no sea que, *lest*.
 ojalá, *would that*.

para que, } *in order that*.
 porque, }
 por que, *however*.
 siempre que, *whenever*.
 sin que, *without*.
 supuesto que, *supposing that*.

NOTE.—Other conjunctions are sometimes used with the subjunctive.

245. (a) The subjunctive is used in relative sentences, when the relative pronoun or adverb refers to a negative idea: *as, no había quien les creyese*. (b) When the relative refers to an unknown or indefinite person or thing: *as, yo le diré cosas que le admiren*. (c) Often when the relative has a general force (*as, any one whatever, anywhere whatever, etc.*): *as, V. hará lo que mejor le pareciere (or parezca)*. (d) The relative referring to a superlative¹ does not require the subjunctive: *as, la ingratitude es uno de los mayores pecados que se conoce*. (e) When the relative expresses a purpose, the subjunctive is used: *as, quiso irse donde sus ojos no la viesen jamás*.

246. (a) The future of the subjunctive is but little used, the present subjunctive generally taking its place: *as, todo lo que me den, all that they may give me; cuando vengan, when they should come*. (b) But when used it is only in sentences beginning with *si, cuando, mientras*, or a relative adverb or pronoun: *as, saldré si no lloviere (or llueve)*. (c) The compound of the present subjunctive is generally used for the compound of the future subjunctive: *as, cuando haya acabado mi tarea, etc.*

¹ The superlative relative is found with the subjunctive, but it is not the superlative as such that requires it.

247. SEQUENCE OF TENSES. (a) Verbs in the present or future indicative or the present subjunctive are generally followed by the present subjunctive or compound of the present: as, **manda que se haga luego; me alegro que lo haya vencido; desearé que V. se divierta.** (b) Verbs in any of the past tenses, simple or compound, of the indicative, conditional or subjunctive, or in the compound future of the indicative, are generally followed by the imperfects of the subjunctive, simple or compound: as, **he mandado que lo llevara (or llevase) V.; me alegrara que lo hubiera visto.**

VOCABULARY XXVIII.

el caballero andante, <i>knight-cura, priest.</i>	<i>[errant.</i>	confundir, <i>to confound.</i>
ganapan, <i>porter.</i>		consultar, <i>to consult.</i>
ignorante, <i>ignorant (one).</i>		decidir, <i>to decide.</i>
insensato, <i>stupid (one).</i>		devolver, <i>to return.</i>
oficio, <i>office.</i>		dispensar, <i>to excuse.</i>
pecado, <i>sin.</i>		disponer, <i>to dispose.</i>
sello, <i>seal.</i>		inducir, <i>to lead (induce).</i>
vencedor, <i>conqueror.</i>		luego, <i>presently, immediately.</i>
la accion, <i>action.</i>		morar, <i>to dwell.</i>
ingratitud, <i>ingratitude.</i>		ofender, <i>to offend.</i>
ínsula (isla), <i>island.</i>		para que, <i>in order that.</i>
mentira, <i>lie.</i>		procurar, <i>to try.</i>
profesion, <i>profession.</i>		resolver (-se), <i>to resolve.</i>
señal, <i>sign.</i>		suplicar, <i>to supplicate.</i>

EXERCISE XXVIII.

1. Los describió á fin de que los ignorantes no los confundan con los verdaderos sabios. 2. Me escapé sin que me viesen. 3. V. habla como si la profesion de las armas fuese oficio de ganapanes. 4. Lo digo para

que (á fin que) V. lo sepa. 5. Me suplicó que le hablase de modo que se resolviese. 6. Buscaba á su amo por largo tiempo, sin que le hallase. 7. ¿Cuándo quiere el banquero que yo le devuelva el dinero? 8. Quien la oiga, creerá que está ya decidido que me quede. 9. Cualquiera palabra ó accion que pueda inducir á otros en error es mentira. 10. Haced bien á los que os hayan ofendido. 11. Déme V. dijo el estudiante un libro que pueda consultar. 12. En cualquiera figura que haya sido, he quedado vencedor de mi enemigo. 13. Con la más mínima señal que me haga V. pondré un sello en mi boca. 14. ¿Quién le había de dar á V. señor ínsulas que gobernase? 15. Me maravillo que hayan creído una noticia tan improbable. 16. El general le habría ordenado que volviera (or volviese).

205(4) + VIII, 513
27

THEME XXVIII.

1. He who responds before he hears shows that he is a stupid [one]. 2. What a gentleman once promises, he tries to fulfil although it costs him his life. 3. If Heaven shall dispose of the king, I swear that I will give you my hand. 4. I place the paper in your hands, in order that you may make use of it. 5. I shall keep it for [a] relic, as long as life shall last. 6. What will your master say when he sees what you have done? 7. He will give me money until I have found a good situation. 8. An American who goes for the first time to Boston will be [a] stranger. 9. My mother needs a servant who knows how to cook well. 10. Work makes for men houses where they may dwell. 11. I rejoice (I regret) to have been the first

who said it. 12. Is there a hamlet priest that can say what my master has said? 13. He is the most loyal squire that ever served¹ a knight-errant. 14. All his friends said to him that he should say what he wished. 15. I beg that you will (may) excuse me from coming to-morrow. 16. I doubted that he would convince him (or) that he would have convinced him.

LESSON XXIX.

THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

248. (*a*) The infinitive is sometimes used exactly as a noun and may take an article (the masculine *el*) before it, may form a plural, be limited by an adjective or possessive or by *de* with its noun, may be subject or object of a verb, or governed by a preposition: as, **evitad el hablar demasiado; los pesares de la vida; el dulce murmurar; al romper (d)-el día; el cantar de las aves es muy agradable; tu saber.** (*b*) Sometimes its verbal force is kept when used as noun, and it may be qualified by an adverb or take an object after it: as, **el hablar corrientemente, etc.; el leer buenos libros, etc.**

249. (*a*) The infinitive as subject is generally used with the article or other qualifiers, but sometimes without: as, **el cazar es buen ejercicio; hablar mucho es un vicio.** (*b*) The infinitive as subject sometimes precedes, as in (*a*), and sometimes follows its verb: as, **no es mi tristeza haber caído en tu poder, I am**

¹ Use preterite indicative.

not sad for, etc. (c) **Que** with a personal form of the verb (indicative or subjunctive) is used instead of the infinitive when its subject cannot be inferred from the rest of the sentence: as, **basta que sepas**, *it is enough that thou knowest*; but, **me basta saber**, **le basta á V. saber**, etc. (d) Sometimes, however, the infinitive is retained and the personal pronoun or other subject placed near it: as, **el oírlo yo**, **me causa lástima**; **el dar el sí mañana la hermosa Julia**.

250. The infinitive without a preposition, generally as direct object, is used after many verbs, of which the principal are :

aconsejar	declarar	manifestar	procurar
acostumbrar	dejar	más vale	prohibir
afirmar	desear	merecer ³	prometer
alegrar (-se)	determinar	mostrar	protestar
andar ¹	esperar	necesitar	querer
celebrar	fingir	negar	saber
concebir	gustar	oír	sentir
confesar	haber menester	osar	soler
conocer	hacer	parecer	temer
contar	holgar	pensar	tener
conviene	imaginar (-se)	poder	vedar
creer	impedir	preferir	venir ⁴
deber ²	intentar	presumir	ver
decir	mandar	pretender	

VOCABULARY XXIX.

el aliento, *breath*.
 banquete, *banquet*.
 cuidado, *care*.
 lacayo, *servant*.

el manjar, *dish (food)*.
 milagro, *miracle*.
 muro, *wall*.
 músico, *musician*.

¹ Andar buscar, *to go to seek*. ² De is sometimes used: as, por aquí cerca debe de estar alguna fuente. ³ Merece ser alabado. ⁴ Viene adorar—á omitted for euphony—*he comes to adore*.

el punto, <i>point</i> .	la utilidad, <i>profit</i> .
término, <i>limit</i> .	aderezar, <i>to prepare (victuals)</i> .
tesoro, <i>treasure</i> .	cansar, <i>to weary</i> .
la admiracion, <i>wonder</i> .	causar, <i>to cause</i> .
las artes, <i>intrigues</i> .	comer, <i>to eat</i> .
la cuestion, <i>question</i> .	comparar, <i>to compare</i> .
dama, <i>lady</i> .	considerar, <i>to consider</i> .
diferencia, <i>difference</i> .	corrientemente, <i>fluently</i> .
doctrina, <i>doctrine</i> .	curioso, <i>curious</i> .
estrella, <i>star</i> .	demasiado, <i>too much</i> .
fuelle, <i>spring</i> .	encantar, <i>to delight</i> .
labradora, <i>working woman</i> .	entristercer, <i>to sadden</i> .
lástima, <i>pity</i> .	facilitar, <i>to facilitate</i> .
locura, <i>folly</i> .	lúgubre, <i>gloomy</i> .
naturaleza, <i>nature</i> .	murmurar, <i>to murmur</i> .
ola, <i>wave</i> .	perfecto, <i>perfect</i> .
renta, <i>income</i> .	por en cima, <i>on top, over</i> .
tristeza, <i>grief, sadness</i> .	romper, <i>to break</i> .

EXERCISE XXIX.

1. Gastar en un banquete la renta de un año es locura. 2. El decir tú sí y el acabarseme la vida, ha de ser todo á un punto. 3. Le entristecía ver que Altisidora no le había cumplido la palabra. 4. Se te ha ido de las mientes haber visto á Dulcinea convertida en labradora. 5. Es decir; se me ha olvidado decir. 6. El suceso que yo he tenido en ver á V., es imposible ser malo. 7. El hablar nosotros pasa de los términos de la naturaleza. 8. Es más milagro darme á mí un poeta un peso que yo recibirle. 9. La diferencia que hay del animal bruto al hombre, es ser el hombre animal racional y el bruto irracional. 10. Esperando ó por mejor decir temiendo perder la vida, fué, etc. 11. Pasábanle las olas por (en) cima, no solo impidiéndole ver el ciclo sino (pero) negándole el

poder pedirle ayuda. 13. Son artes que nuestros mayores prohibieron aprenderse. 14. El reino de Dios no es comer ni beber sino (mas) paz y justicia. 15. Quiero imitar al pueblo en el vestido, en las costumbres sólo á los mejores. 16. La que (ella) decía ser mi madre está allá.

THEME XXIX.

1. It would be curious to compare this doctrine with the other. 2. To take from a knight his lady is to take from him his eyes. 3. Let it not weary you to hear me relate what happened to me. 4. It is not my sadness that (I am not sad because) my friend has fallen in your power. 5. You shall conquer the stars; for it is possible to conquer them. 6. I seem to see her enter (between) the gloomy walls of this prison. 7. It will not be lost care to consider this question. 8. Your saying this (*el decirlo tú*) and my hearing it causes me new wonder. 9. Where is that trembling (of) all before him and that speaking to him on the knees? 10. The general determined to put them at (in) liberty. 11. The doctor has no need to go to seek help. 12. The horses need to take breath in order not to fall on the way. 13. The perfect playing of this musician delights one. 14. He knows how to prepare and cook many good dishes. 15. The profit of the kingdom counselled facilitating for both cities the commerce with America. 16. If I should get a servant like you, I should believe [myself] to have found a treasure.

LESSON XXX.

THE INFINITIVE (CONCLUDED).

251. The infinitive (generally in independent construction) is used after the prepositions, **á, ántes de, con, despues de, en, en cuanto á, en vez de, hasta, para, por, sin, sobre** and many compounds of **de**: **as, al perder el cuerpo la vida; á ser otra cosa; le ganó á correr; junto con ser cruel era encantador; hasta verte; no se siguió el alcance por ser noche; sin yo pensarlo; á pesar de (or) sin embargo de (or) no obstante de haberle yo pagado, no estuvo satisfecho.**

252. (a) The infinitive in dependent constructions is used after the prepositions **á** and **de**, also after **con, en, para, por**, and so used. (b) **Á**, with the infinitive, follows verbs of motion, and others with which the idea of direction toward an end is united.

The principal verbs are: **animar, aprender, aspirar, ayudar, comenzar, condenar, consentir, convidar, conviene, dar, echar, empezar, enseñar, enviar, habituar, inclinar, invitar, ir, mostrar, obligar, pasar, salir, tender, venir, volver.** **Él vino á visitarme; salí á ver los soldados; él me enseña á cantar; nos convidó á comer con él.**

(b') **A** with the infinitive follows other verbs, participles, or adjectives whose meaning naturally require *to* (**á**): such as, **bastar, esforzarse, obligar, precisar, etc.**: **as, se esfuerza á hacerlo; no estás tú obligado á saber latin.** (b'') Besides **esforzarse, etc.** (see *b'*), **atreverse, decidirse, negarse, ponerse, resistirse,** are so used: **as, on me atrevo á hablarle.** (c) **De**, with the following

infinitive, may follow substantives or adjectives: as, **es tiempo de dormir; es bueno de comer.** (*c'*) After verbs of emotion, etc.; after verbs denoting removal, cessation, etc.; after *to be* used impersonally, and after **haber** (and often **tener** in the sense of *is to*, or *must*): as, **me alegro de ver á V. bueno; desistió de perseguir á sus contrarios** (*opposes*). **Es de desear. ¿Qué me tengo de armar?** (*d*) **Con** (the manner how, or means by which) with following infinitive: as, **le entretengo con contarle cuentos.** (*e*) **En** with following infinitive: as, **empleo mi tiempo en estudiar.** (*f*) **Para** with the following infinitive: as, **tiene bastante dinero para comprar la casa.** (*f'*) **Para**, *in order to*, after **estar**, means *to be about to*: as, **estoy para marcharme.** (*g*) **Por** (*for the sake of*): as, **trabaja por alcanzar premio.** (*g'*) **Estar por** means *to intend, is not yet*: as, **estuve por responderle; la casa está por acabar**, *the house is not yet finished.* (*h*) **Que** is often followed by the infinitive, especially when its subject is the same as that of the principal verb: as, **nada tiene que explicar; tengo que escribir una carta; hoy hay (or mañana habrá) mucho que hacer.**

VOCABULARY XXX.

el alcance, <i>pursuit.</i>	el homenaje, <i>homage.</i>
arrepentimiento, <i>repentance.</i>	lenguaje, <i>language.</i>
bárbaro, <i>barbarian.</i>	oído, <i>ear.</i>
contrario, <i>opposer.</i>	restante, <i>rest.</i>
cuento, <i>story.</i>	tema, <i>theme.</i>
cuerpo, <i>body.</i>	teólogo, <i>theologian.</i>
emperador, <i>emperor.</i>	la bandera, <i>flag.</i>
encantador, <i>enchanter.</i>	cena, <i>supper.</i>
enfermo, <i>sick (man).</i>	conversacion, <i>conversation.</i>

las fiestas, <i>holidays</i> .	entretener, <i>to entertain</i> .
la impresion, <i>impression</i> .	esforzar (-se), <i>to make efforts</i> .
misanropía, <i>misanthropy</i> .	marchar (-se), <i>to go off</i> .
muestra, <i>sign</i> .	perseguir, <i>to pursue</i> .
la salud, <i>health</i> .	pescar, <i>to fish</i> .
abandonar, <i>to abandon</i> .	privar, <i>to deprive</i> .
abrazar, <i>to embrace</i> .	provenir, <i>to arise</i> .
deleitar, <i>to delight</i> .	reconocer, <i>to recognize</i> .
destruir, <i>to destroy</i> .	rendir, <i>to render</i> .
dibujar, <i>to draw</i> .	sobre, <i>besides</i> .
diferente, <i>different</i> .	tardar, <i>to tarry</i> .
emplear, <i>to employ</i> .	variar, <i>to vary</i> .
entender, <i>to understand</i> .	visitar, <i>to visit</i> .

EXERCISE XXX.

1. Al oír eras palabras ya le reconocemos á V.
 2. La vista se deleita con el nacer de la luz y con el variar de las nubes. 3. Preguntaré hasta saber la verdad. 4. Ninguna de estas razones fué entendida de los bárbaros por ser dichas en diferente lenguaje que el suyo. 5. Se come para vivir. 6. Mis hermanas aprenden á dibujar con el Señor Rondel. 7. Presté dos libros á su amigo de V., pero él no ha vuelto á traérmelos. 8. El juez se contentó, con privar al reo de la libertad. 9. Por la culpa, de no habérmelo tú acordado te sucedió eso. 10. Abrazóme, diciendo que había esperado¹ de hacer impresion sus razones. 11. No por eso ha dejado de ser ella la que ántes era. 12. No deja de ser un enfermo, con todo eso trabaja mucho. 13. Es de desear que haga buen tiempo durante las fiestas (*holidays*). 14. Más tardó en hablar Don Quijote que en acabarse la cena. 15. Aunque

¹ Rather antiquated.

tiene oídos para oír, no tiene lengua para hablar.
 16. Pocas palabras me quedan por decir, aunque muchas lágrimas sí que llorar. 17. Su misantropía proviene de no haber nunca tenido un verdadero amigo.

THEME XXX.

1. Besides being king, he wishes to make himself emperor. 2. Even the boys of this city, without ever having seen me, know me. 3. (The) which histories, for not being to my taste, I do not mention (them). 4. He must be [a] theologian, in order to know how to give account of the Christian law. 5. I shall remain at home instead of going out. 6. The banker has invited us to dine, but we cannot go. 7. I am going to visit some friends who have arrived from France. 8. This man has destroyed his health by (con) much drinking. 9. The poor boy had (the) misfortune to lose his watch. 10. It would weigh upon me to see him give signs of any repentance. 11. Soon all will love him without any one ceasing to fear him. 12. They accuse the soldier of having abandoned his flag. 13. He is to work this morning, and can fish this afternoon. 14. The rest of the conversation was occupied in speaking of the king. 15. I come accompanied by my son to render you the first homage. 16. I had neither lessons to study nor themes to write out.

LESSON XXXI.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE (OR GERUND).
PAST PARTICIPLE.

253. The present¹ participle is not used as an adjective but as a verb, hence does not change its form for gender and number, and is used : (a) For the infinitive with a preposition (especially in the sense of *by*): as, **me divierto leyendo** (or **en leer**); **gana su vida escribiendo** (or **en escribir**). (b) The present participle, when not referring to a verb (as, **continuó escribiendo**), is often placed at the beginning of the sentence; and when there, naturally refers to the subject: as, **estudiando se aprende**; **viéndole tomar la espada le dijo**, *on seeing him take*, etc. (c) The present participle with **en** often implies a close relation between what precedes and what follows: as, **llega otro, y dale de palos, y en dándoselos huye**. (d) The continuation of an action or state is often denoted by **estar** with the present participle: as, **¿Qué estás haciendo?** **Estoy escribiendo una carta**; **estarse durmiendo**, *to be falling to sleep*;—but with verbs of motion **ir**, not **estar**, is used: as, **va corriendo**. (e) **Ir**, with the present participle, generally means continua-

¹ The name *present participle* is used instead of “gerund” because the latter is little used in English, and the real present participle forms (such as **calmante**, **habitante**, and **doliente**) are not used as participles.

tion or increase. **Se va burlando de vosotros, he keeps making fun of you.** **El fuego se iba extendiendo.**

254. (a) The past¹ participle with the meaning of a verb has the form of an adjective, and when formed from transitive verbs it has a passive, and from intransitive verbs an active meaning. Its chief use is to form the compound tenses (generally with **haber**). (b) The past participle is not varied with **haber** as the auxiliary: as, **ella ha escrito.** With **llevar** and **tener** it agrees in gender and number with the object: as, **llevo escrita una carta; also, ellos se hallan arruinados.** With **andar, ir,** and **quedar** it agrees with the subject: as, **él anda descuidado; ellos van satisfechos.** In the passive voice the past participle agrees with the subject: as, **nosotros hemos sido castigados.** The past participle of **ser** and **estar** (conjugated with auxiliary **haber**) are never varied; **hemos estado allí.** (c) When not used as a verb, but as an adjective, the past participle, of course, agrees with the noun or pronoun qualified: as, **una carta bien escrita.** (d) The past participle is used absolutely (or independently): as, **acabada la cena, nos fuimos á pasear.** (e) The feminines of many past participles are used as nouns: as, **la bebida, the drink**;—sometimes other forms: as, **los desgraciados, the unfortunate.** (f) Past participles may be used with prepositions: as, **despues de restablecida la paz, florecerán las artes; es un hombre despreciado de todos.** (g) For double forms of the past participle, see List of Irregular Verbs (page 113, etc.).

¹ The reflexive participle rarely takes the reflexive pronoun; but is the same in form as that of a non reflexive verb: as, **alegrado, instead of alegradose.**

VOCABULARY XXXI.

el asno, <i>ass.</i>	la yerba, <i>grass.</i>
daño, <i>loss.</i>	acribillado, <i>drubbed.</i>
devoto, <i>devout (man).</i>	amontonar, <i>to mass.</i>
mantel, <i>tablecloth.</i>	arruinar, <i>to ruin.</i>
niche, <i>niche.</i>	asultar, <i>to assault.</i>
paje, <i>page.</i>	callar, <i>to keep silent.</i>
palo, <i>blow (with stick).</i>	calmante, <i>narcotic.</i>
pensamiento, <i>thought.</i>	descuidar, <i>to neglect.</i>
rebaño, <i>flock.</i>	despreciar, <i>to despise.</i>
reconocimiento, <i>gratitude.</i>	doliente, <i>sorrowful.</i>
rubor, <i>blush.</i>	edificar, <i>to build.</i>
templo, <i>temple.</i>	florecer, <i>to flourish.</i>
la cantidad, <i>quantity.</i>	lleno, <i>full.</i>
cara, <i>face.</i>	modificar (-se), <i>to be modified.</i>
conjuración, <i>conspiracy.</i>	mostrar, <i>to show.</i>
doncella, <i>maiden.</i>	prendado, <i>smitten (in love).</i>
idea, <i>idea.</i>	rebuznar, <i>to bray.</i>
oveja, <i>sheep.</i>	respirar, <i>to breathe.</i>
partida, <i>party (squad).</i>	sucesivamente, <i>little by little.</i>
risa, <i>laughter.</i>	velar, <i>to watch.</i>
ventana, <i>window.</i>	vestir (-se), <i>to dress.</i>
victoria, <i>victory.</i>	

EXERCISE XXXI.

1. El devoto mostró su reconocimiento, edificando templos. 2. Y teniendo yo más vida, tengo menos libertad—Calderon. 3. Estaba para volver, quedando muy ocupado (en) vistiéndose (en vestirse). 4. Un rebaño de ovejas andaba paciando la yerba al rededor de él. 5. Más vale pájaro en la mano que buitre volando. 6. Hasta entonces el joven había ido callando y escuchando. 7. Habiéndola visto un día quedó prendado de ella. 8. Levantados los manteles y tomando D. Antonio

por la mano á D. Quijote, se entró. 9. ¿Cuánto hay que ha muerto este hombre? 10. Escribió una carta al emperador, refiriéndole lo acaecido. 11. Abandonado enteramente y olvidado, sólo respiraba venganza. 12. Ganada la Sierra y rotos los Moros se vió obligado á quedarse allá. 13. Tomó la carta, cubierta su bella cara de un honestísimo rubor. 14. Despues de bien acribillado le echaron á la calle. 15. Á pocas calles andadas encontró con el paje—Cervantes. 16. Teniendo ya preparado mi viaje, hube de diferirlo por el mal estado de los caminos.

THEME XXXI.

1. Trembling from head to foot, he went away from the house. 2. The army lost the victory [after] having lost its king. 3. While¹ passing, I saw the woman looking out of the window. 4. These ideas kept on being modified little by little. 5. Always gaining and never spending, they amass the greatest quantity of money. 6. The servant sleeps and the master is watching. 7. The duchess was dying with laughter, on hearing Sancho² speak. 8. When I brayed, all the asses of the town brayed. 9. The conspiracy discovered, the king bought him of his master. 10. Aided by (of) God they found from (a) (such—great) loss a sure and speedy escape. 11. He was informed that the general, all his force being joined, was awaiting him. 12. This being said, the lawyer presented the paper. 13. He passed the night without sleeping; his thought busied with the face of the maiden.

¹ Old form, *en pasando* ; modern form, *al pasar*.

² *Á* must be used before Sancho.

14. He answered, with his eyes full of tears. 15. After having locked the door, he put the key in a niche. 16. While I was sleeping, a party of robbers stormed the house.

LESSON XXXII.

THE ADVERBS.¹

255. The adverbs are (*a*) simple: *as, bien, mal*, etc. (*b*) Derived (chiefly from adjectives by adding *mente*²—English like *ly*): *as, altamente, dulcemente, claramente, ciertamente, fuertemente*. (*c*) Compound: *as, de dia, de noche, á menudo, de veras, de rodillas, á solas* (alone), etc. (*d*) Adjectives (especially those ending in *o*) are often used as adverbs without change of form: *as, alto, claro, bajo, cierto, derecho*, etc. (*e*) *Algo bastante* (enough), *cuanto, demasiado, mucho, muy, nada, poco, tanto*, etc., are used as adverbs.

256. (*a*) Some adverbs of affirmation and negation are: *acaso, cierto, ciertamente, eso sí, nada, no, no nada, por supuesto, probablemente, quizá, quizás, si, sin duda, tampoco, verdaderamente*. (*b*)—(*α*) Adverbs of place: *as, aquí³, acá³, here; ahí, allí³, allá³, there*. (*β*) Adverbs of time and order: *ahora, ántes, á noche, en primer lugar*, etc. (*γ*) Quantity: *más, ménos*, etc. (*δ*) Quality: *así, tal, (so): mejor, peor*, etc. (*ε*) Others are: *de buena gana, willingly; con mucho gusto*, etc.

¹ For the negative adverb with verb, see 223 (*a*).

² *Mente* is added to the feminine form of the adjective. if there is a particular feminine form: *as, sabio, sabia, sabiamente*; but. *facil, facilmente*.

³ *Aquí* and *allí* generally with verbs of rest; *acá* and *allá* with verbs of motion.

257. COMPARISON OF ADVERBS. (a) The comparison of adverbs, except that they do not vary for gender or number, is substantially the same as that of adjectives, and the adverbs of comparison for both comparative and superlative degrees are: **más, ménos, mejor, peor, más bien, más mal; ménos bien, ménos mal; as, más tarde, later or latest, más duramente, harder or hardest.** **Cuenta dos años ménos que su hermano; tiene ménos de cincuenta años; por lo más.¹** (b) Absolute superlative forms are: **fortísimamente** (from **fortísimo**), **facilísimamente** (from **facilísimo**), **muchísimo, poquísimo, lejísimos, muy bien, muy de mañana, etc.** (c) **Tan-como, no-ménos que, cuanto-tanto,** etc., are a kind of correlative comparative forms. (d) After comparative adverbs, the negatives are sometimes used idiomatically: **as, se fiaba de él más que de ninguno.**

257 bis. Some peculiarities of the use of adverbs: (a) **otras ceremonias que tú no sabes y yo sí** (*and I do know*). **Respondió que sí** (or **que no**). (b) **Nunca** and **jamas**, each meaning *never*, generally precede the verb, but if they follow, some other negative generally precedes the verb: **as, jamas** (or better, with past tense, **nunca**) **ví tal cosa; él no quiere jamas nada; no le olvidaré para (por) nunca jamas; para siempre jamas** (*for ever*). (c) **No** is sometimes pleonastic: **as, ¿cuán dulce no es la esperanza?**—and especially with verbs of fearing and denying: **as, temió no le perdiesen el respeto,** *he feared they would lose respect for him.* (d) A kind of double negative (either **no** or negative indefinite pronoun) is often used with verbs of denying, refusing, doubting, etc.: with expressions of hostility, carelessness, etc.; with **sin** and **nunca**: **as, no consiente que ningunos otros que los suyos me avasallen.** (e) The adverb is sometimes

¹ **Más** is not an adverb in such constructions, though **por lo más** is.

joined to a noun idiomatically: *as, es muy Español; la siempre señora mia.* (f) *Ya*, generally meaning *already*, is sometimes best rendered by *since, indeed, now*, etc.: *as, ya que V. lo sabe, since you know it; ya se arrepentirá V., you will indeed repent.*

258. (a) The place of the adverb is generally after the verb (and after the participle in compound tenses): *as, el discípulo ha estudiado siempre su lección.* (b) Except the negative *no*, the adverb rarely comes in between the subject and verb: *mi amigo no ha llegado.* (c) The adverbs of exclamation (*como, cuanto*, etc.), and *apénas, así que, cuando, de donde, donde, luego, que, miéntras que*, and some others precede the verb and the subject: *as, ¡Cómo me ha engañado este hombre! Luego que nos apartamos del camino real*, etc. (d) Except with the verb, the adverb generally precedes the word it modifies.

VOCABULARY XXXII.

<i>el instrumento, instrument.</i>	<i>avasallar, to enslave.</i>
<i>salario, salary.</i>	<i>condenar, to condemn.</i>
<i>violin, violin.</i>	<i>curar (-se), to take account.</i>
<i>la cabalgadura, baggage-horse.</i>	<i>enfrenar, to bridle.</i>
<i>cebada, barley.</i>	<i>extender, to reach.</i>
<i>cuerda, cord.</i>	<i>habitable, habitable.</i>
<i>hermosura, beauty.</i>	<i>harto, enough.</i>
<i>malicia, malice.</i>	<i>á merced, gratis.</i>
<i>modestia, modesty.</i>	<i>por . . . que, however.</i>
<i>necesidad, necessity.</i>	<i>real, royal (state).</i>
<i>administrar, to administer.</i>	<i>reparable, worthy of attention.</i>
<i>admitir, to admit.</i>	<i>temeroso, afraid.</i>
<i>aguardar, to await.</i>	<i>turbar, to confuse.</i>

EXERCISE XXXII.

1. Ciceron habló sabia¹ y elocuentemente ; César escribió elegantemente. 2. Era hombre para conseguirlo, bien que fuese cosa más grande. 3. Le aguardaré esta noche en el café del Leon de Oro. 4. Hablando es como se aprende á hablar una lengua. 5. Mejor es el trabajo que no la ociosidad ó la necesidad. 6. Harto le hemos aconsejado ; pero él se cura poco de consejos. 7. Mira hasta donde se extiende la malicia de los encantadores. 8. Para administrar bien los intereses de la sociedad es preciso conocerlos perfectamenta. 9. La razon quiere que el hombre siga más los prudentes consejos que no su propia voluntad. 10. No queremos más (de) que dar cebada á nuestras cabalgaduras. 11. Yo he hecho mal en leerlos y peor en creerlos, y más mal en imitarlos. 12. Mi madre es muy mujer de casa; se levanta tan de mañana, lo siento mucho. 13. No creo que jamas estuvieron á salario, sino á merced. 14. El reo está temeroso² de (no) ser hallado de la justicia. 15. Dudo mucho que nadie pueda condenar mis acciones. 16. Respondió que no traía dinero (-s) porque él nunca había leído en las historias de los caballeros andantes que ninguno lo (-s) hubiese traído.

THEME XXXII.

1. She was worthy of attention, as much for her beauty as for her modesty. 2. Among us there are scarcely heard those barbarous expressions. 3. It

¹ **Mente** of *elocuentemente* understood with *sabia*.

² **Está temeroso** is the same as *tema*, *fears*.

is necessary to speak well, if we wish that they listen to us. 4. This is the reason why (for the which) I have not yet said it to him. 5. See here, to what the passions lead when reason does not bridle them. 6. In the whole house, large as it was, there was not a single habitable room. 7. As is the life so is almost always the death. 8. The merchant has read your letter with much attention. 9. I have not seen him more than once¹ in all this time. 10. Among the string instruments, the violin pleases me most. 11. The counsel of the poor, however good it was, was never admitted. 12. He wished to go away where his eyes would never see her again. 13. I do not deny that what has happened to us is a ridiculous thing. 14. It is a garden whose owner does not consent that any one walk through it. 15. I do not know how I am able to say it without that shame confuses my tongue. 16. He has good and bad books, but more of the good (books).

LESSON XXXIII.

PREPOSITIONS.

259. A number of prepositions are used in composition with other words (as inseparable prepositions): as, *abs-tracto*, *ante-ojo*, *anti-patía*, *circun-specto*, *consentir*, *de-generacion*, *e-mision*, *ex-clamar*, *ex-provincial*, *entre-tiempo*, *equi-látero*, *extra-ordinario*, *engolfar*, *in-dócil*, etc.

¹ *Una vez*; *than* before *una* either *de* or *que*; before other numerals *de*.

a person ; after certain verbs and adjectives and in independent constructions: as,

Vamos á dar un paseo Da el regalo á los niños. Adolfo busca á Carlos. La ventana da al patio (*overlooks the yard*). El criado juega á los naipes. Huele á (*of*) ámbar. Fiel á sus amigos. Á tres del mes. Hecho á martillo. Voy á España ; á Madrid.

263. De (*of*) is used as sign of the infinitive ; after many verbs ; to give the reason why ; before the agent in passive construction ; to represent the meaning involved or rôle taken ; after many adjectives ; after many nouns, and in independent construction :

Ha de venir ; acaba de venir ; se aparta de sus amigos. La ciudad se puebla de gente. Padece de los ojos. Se trata de una nueva convencion. Lloró de gozo. Es aborrecido de todos. Le censuran de avaro. Trabaja de carpintero. Pobre de conceptos ; digno de elogio. Sordo de un oido. El hombre de la casaca verde. Dos pies de ancho. Logró el nombre de católico. Infeliz de tí (*unhappy thou*). Parece un ángel de hermosa (*for hermosura*). No comía Don Quijote de puro pesoroso (*weariness*). De dia, etc.

264. En, *in, on* : En mi ausencia. En general. En la calle. Estoy en Paris ; en España. En (*on*) el puente. De rato en (*to*) rato. De puerta en puerta. En cuanto á mi (*with regard to me*).

265. Para, *for (the purpose of), in order to (or that), to*, denotes the end or purpose of an action: as, estudio para aprender. It denotes the use, intention, etc.; la tinta (*ink*) es para escribir; esto es para V. It denotes capacity, etc.: as, es hombre para mucho. It sometimes means direction: as, va para América. It sometimes refers to time: as, estaremos de vuelta para las Pascuas (*the Easter holidays*).

266. Por, *by, for, through*, denotes motive, cause, or reason ; also the means by which a thing is done: as, hágalo V. por caridad; lo hizo por malicia. It de-

notes instrumentality; el libro fué escrito por él, é impreso por su hermano. Sometimes it means *in place of*: as, obro por él. Note the following:

Murió por su patria. Trabaja por alcanzar un premio (para ganar). Preguntar por alguno. Por un año. Ir por pan. Tener por bueno. Palabra por palabra. Pasar por la calle. El mundo fué hecho por Dios. Lo hizo por amor. Vendió su caballo por dos mil reales. Á un duro por docena, por libra, etc. Pasó por mi ventana (*by my window*). Le tomé por médico. La mesa tiene ocho piés de largo por cuatro de ancho (but y more usual than por).

VOCABULARY XXXIII.

el abrigo, <i>shelter</i> .	la piña, <i>cone</i> .
abril, <i>April</i> .	reverencia, <i>reveration</i> .
ámbar, <i>amber</i> .	senda, <i>path</i> .
campanario, <i>belfry</i> .	traba, <i>trammel</i> .
carpintero, <i>carpenter</i> .	ventaja, <i>advantage</i> .
extranjero, <i>stranger</i> .	apartar (-se) <i>to separate, leave</i> .
extraño, <i>foreigner</i> .	comparecer, <i>to appear (in court)</i> .
malecon, <i>dike</i> .	construir (-se), <i>to be constructed</i> .
mando, <i>power</i> .	coronar, <i>to crown</i> .
martillo, <i>hammer</i> .	desventurado, <i>unfortunate</i> .
naipe, <i>card</i> .	discurrir, <i>to discuss</i> .
perjuicio, <i>prejudice</i> .	disgustar, <i>to disgust</i> .
rato, <i>time (short)</i> .	embarazar, <i>to embarrass</i> .
rico, <i>rich (man)</i> .	encaminar (-se), <i>to betake (one's self)</i> .
súbdito <i>subject (citizen)</i> .	enterar (-se), <i>to inform (one's self)</i> .
trigo, <i>wheat</i> .	mediano, <i>mediocre</i> .
la ausencia, <i>absence</i> .	mudar, <i>to change</i> .
autoridad, <i>authority</i> .	notar, <i>to notice</i> .
avenida, <i>inundation</i> .	odiar, <i>to hate</i> .
capa, <i>cloak</i> .	pensativo, <i>thoughtful</i> .
copa, <i>bowerlike branch</i> .	perorar, <i>to harangue</i> .
disputa, <i>dispute</i> .	público, <i>public</i> .
distancia, <i>difference</i> .	sentenciar, <i>to sentence</i> .
fachada, <i>façade</i> .	social, <i>social</i> .
fragilidad, <i>frailty</i> .	tras, <i>behind</i> .
magistratura, <i>magistracy</i> .	

EXERCISE XXXIII.

1. Ha obrado correspondientemente á su clase, (*or*) separadamente de los suyos. 2. El hijo menor estaba bajo la autoridad paterna. 3. De la magistratura al mando supremo hay gran distancia. 4. El mismo amor y reverencia le siguieron á Sicilia. 5. El reo compareció ante el juez y fué sentenciado. 6. Está embarazado con los muchos negocios á que ha de atender. 7. El rey se veía odiado de sus súbditos, y perseguido de los extraños. 8. ¡Desventurados de ellos, si se apartan de la senda de la virtud! 9. Escribió diez cartas en un cuarto de hora la noche pasada. 10. Entre confuso y pensativo el extranjero nos respondió. 11. El enfermo se levantó y se encaminó hácia la puerta. 12. Para un escritor mediano se hallan cien detestables. 13. De nada valen las riquezas para con (*in the presence of*) la muerte. 14. Mudé de tono por ó para no disgustar á mi padre. 15. Pagaré el trigo, segun el precio á que se venda en el próximo abril. 16. El pájaro buscó un abrigo so las copas de los árboles (*so, rarely used, means under*).

THEME XXXIII.

1. From eight to nine he was reading public documents. 2. It was crowned in February with a beautiful cone of white flowers. 3. The commerce with India is now free from its old trammels. 4. The officer did not inform himself well concerning the dispute. 5. The façade of the church is under the bell-tower (belfry). 6. A dike was constructed against the inundations of the river. 7. He was talking of

the advantages that (the) social life brings with it. 8. There is [a] great difference between (from) a rich and a poor (man). 9. He was haranguing from three till five in (of) the afternoon. 10. The general made a treaty with the enemy to (en) [the] prejudice of the state. 11. Quintana rightly counts Herrera among the first (best) Spanish poets. 12. Wait here; toward midday we shall see one another. 13. To (in order to) tell the truth, I have not breakfasted to-day. 14. The boy took his brother's cloak for his own, without noticing it. 15. The orator spoke (discussed) upon the frailty of our life. 16. The robber fled, and shut behind him the door of the room.

LESSON XXXIV.

PREPOSITIONS (CONCLUDED).

267. Without attempting explanations, I shall give some illustrations of the different ways of translating English prepositions into Spanish.

About :

Iba bailando por la ciudad. Habló de (or sobre) ese negocio. Tratado (*a treatise*) sobre los idiotismos españoles. Estaba para decírselo á V.

Above :

No alcanzo á comprenderlo ; *It is above my comprehension.* Su liberalidad excede á sus recursos (*means*).

After :

Después de las tres. Á la (moda) americana. Hace las cosas á su antojo. Iba en busca de un amigo ; *I was looking after a friend.* Según su modo de escribir. *after me comes my friend*, *tras mí viene mi amigo.* *The minister is after the ambassador (in rank),* *el ministro es después del embajador*

Against :

Me opuse á ello ; *I set my face against it.* Estaré de vuelta para fines del mes ; *I shall be back against (by) the end of the month.*

Along :

Á lo largo de la ribera. Venga V. conmigo ; *come along with me.* Por la calle.

At :

¿ Están en casa ? En Paris. No sé como determinar ; *I am at a loss,* etc. De ningun modo ; *not at all.* Entró por la ventana. Está comiendo ; *he is at dinner.*

Before :

Delante de mi ventana. Ante el juez. Llegaré ántes de la semana que viene.

Behind :

Le deja en zaga. Viene V. tarde ; *behind (your time).*

Beneath :

Tales acciones son indignas de un caballero. Bajo (or so) capa de santo.

Beside :

Parecía fuera de sí. Al lado mio.

Beyond :

Excede á toda alabanza. Fuera de mi alcance. Sin duda alguna.

By :

De noche. Por accidente. Impelido de la necesidad. Uno á uno. ¿ Por dónde le vino á V. ? ; *how did you come by it ?* Luego ; *by and by.* Por mar. Á la mano, *close by.* El banco de Baltimore está junto á mi casa. Despreciado de todos.

Down :

Cuesta abajo ; *down the hill.* Echelo V. en tierra ; *throw it down.*

For :

Esta flor es para ella. Parto mañana para Segovia. Por amor de mí. Por miedo. Actuo (*I act*) por él. Durará por muchos años. Lo compré por un peso. Me es imposible á mí.

En cuante á mí ; *as for me*. Murió por su patria. El apostó por su hermano.

From :

Vengo de Francia. Lo hizo de miedo. Dígale V. de mi parte (*from or for me*).

In :

Por la mañana ; es el sol el astro (planeta) más brillante del universo. Es la primavera. Ponga V. sus papeles en el cajón.

Into :

Bajar al jardín. Entraron en alianza.

Of :

Todos nosotros. Le pido á V. Tener buena fame ; *to be well spoken of*. Por supuesto : ignorar el hecho.

Off :

¿ Cuánto dista ? Sobre el puerto ; *off the post*. De improviso ; *offhand*. Levántelo V. del suelo. Quítese V. el sombrero. Se la llevó ; *he carried her off*. Le perdoné, or le dejé ir ; *I let him off*. Pronto acabaré ; *I shall soon leave off*.

On :

Quédese V. con la capa puesta ; *keep on your cloak*. Sobre la mesa. Vino (el) lunes pasado. Les encontró en el camino. Por ese motivo. De este lado y de aquel. En ciertas ocasiones. Al contrario. A pié. A caballo. Adelante ; *come in, go on*. Dependá V. de mí. Sobre mi palabra. No se tratan ; *they are not on good terms*. Les impuse esa obligacion. Sentado en el canapé. Venga V. el doce de mayo. Se alimenta de pan.

Over :

El coche le pasó encima (*over him*). Por todo el mundo. Al (or del) otro lado ; *over the way*. Se acabó ; *it is all over*. Vuelva V. á leerlo, or repáselo V. ; *read it over*. No sobró nada. Acabe V. ; *give over*. Encima de la puerta.

Out :

De miedo ; *out of fear*. Fuera de peligro. Fuera de casa. Está sin dinero. Descompuesto ; *out of order*. Por (or de) ven-

ganza; *out of vengeance*. Por curiosidad. Estar de mal humor; *to be out of humor*.

Through:

Pasé por la calle del mercado. Le atravesó de parte á parte. Pasé por entre la caterva. Por razon de él. Por medio de él. Por (or de) envidia. Por todo el pais. Se entregaron de hambre.

Till; until:

Que daré hasta pasada mañana.

To:

De dia en dia. De puerta en puerta. Eso está aun por venir. Esto es nuevo para (to) mí. Secretario de (to) la embajada. Víctima de (of, to) sus pasiones. Diez contra uno. Hasta el dia de hoy. Entregué la carta á mi padre.

Toward:

Hácia Madrid. *Su conducta para con sus hijos.*

Under:

Debajo de la silla. Bajo la mesa. El navío está á la vela. Es menor de edad. Bajo de juramento. *Socapa de. So pretexto de.*

Up:

Hácia allá; *up that way*. ¿Están levantados?; *are they up?* Al segundo piso; *up two pairs of stairs*.

With:

Con el cuchillo. Con dulzura. Riñeron entre sí. Armese V. de paciencia. Dotado de virtudes.

Within:

A tiro de pistola. El está dentro de la prison.

Without:

Sin zapatos. Vine sin ella. Sin excepcion. Fuera de casa.

268. NOTE.—La muerte de César el (not del) hombre más valiente. Llegó á Bona, ciudad en Prusia. Excepto yo, tú, él. Segun creo. Estar por; *to be about, to have a mind*. Estar para; *to be ready for*. Estar en; *to be determined on, to understand*. Este dinero es para tí, para él, y para ella.

269. Prepositions always precede the words they govern: ¿ **A** quien escribió **V.**?, *to whom did you write?* (or *whom did you write to?*); **este es el libro de que hablada**, *this is the book which I spoke of* (or *of which I spoke*).

VOCABULARY XXXIV.

el ánimo, <i>mind.</i>	la estimacion, <i>esteem.</i>
antojo, <i>whim.</i>	gala, <i>ornament.</i>
cajon <i>drawer.</i>	imágen, <i>figure (of speech).</i>
camino de hierro, <i>railway.</i>	ribera, <i>shore.</i>
canapé, <i>couch.</i>	selva, <i>forest.</i>
comedor, <i>dining-room.</i>	vela, <i>sail.</i>
contento, <i>contentment.</i>	bailar, <i>to dance.</i>
juramento, <i>oath.</i>	bajar, <i>to descend.</i>
mártes, <i>Tuesday.</i>	conforme, <i>according to.</i>
monje, <i>monk.</i>	dotado, <i>endowed.</i>
oriente, <i>east.</i>	(de) enfrente, <i>opposite.</i>
parecer, <i>opinion.</i>	esforzado, <i>vigorous.</i>
pintor, <i>painter.</i>	establecer, <i>to establish.</i>
sentido, <i>sense.</i>	granjear, <i>to win.</i>
suelo, <i>ground.</i>	igualar, <i>to equal.</i>
tiro, <i>shot.</i>	mediante, <i>by means of.</i>
la bala, <i>ball (shot).</i>	por donde, <i>through.</i>
caterva, <i>crowd.</i>	practicar, <i>to practise.</i>
embajada, <i>embassy.</i>	

EXERCISE XXXIV.

1. No se puede negar, que para un hombre como él semejante expresion no le estaba bien. 2. Hay treinta y seis millas de Baltimore á Washington. 3. El llegó allí el doce de enero y volverá el mártes veinte y ocho. 4. Ve á la sala; y cuando vuelvas, entra en el comedor á ver si la comida está en la mesa. 5. Se paseaba por las calles sin sombrero. 6. Á las diez de la mañana

estábamos fuera del puerto. 7. La poesía vive de las imágenes materiales y saca de ellas su mayor gala y hermosura. 8. Estamos seguros y nos alegramos de que tenga esa intencion el gobierno. 9. Esta casa es mejor y tan grande como la de enfrente. 10. No lo gozaba con la libertad que los gozara, si fueran míos. 11. Dan testimonio de que por aquí cerca debe de estar (*or* haber) alguna fuente. 12. El cielo, la mar, el viento todos juntos y cada uno de por sí, prometían felicísimo viaje. 13. En su juventud siguió la guerra, donde se acreditó de valeroso y esforzado capitán. 14. Lo primero en que puse los ojos, fué en cuatro niños. 15. ¿Por quién pregunta V.? ¿Por qué pregunta su amigo de V.?

THEME XXXIV.

1. My father's house stands (is) toward the north and not toward the east. 2. There is not upon (en) the earth, according to my opinion, contentment that equals the regaining lost freedom. 3. For so large a house the door is too small. 4. Charity, the least practised, is above all the virtues. 5. Our senses are the doors through which (**por donde**) the images of things enter our minds, by means of which we know them. 6. Even in (por) the mountains and forests are those who know (of) music. 7. Bossuet carried to the highest degree the talents of orator and of theologian. 8. He had returned to his village with [the] reputation of [being] wise and very learned. 9. This man smells to me more like (á) a robber than a monk. 10. This portrait was made by the painter who is passing along the street. 11. With the same [thing with] which he thought to make himself happy he makes

himself miserable. 12. John earns five francs a day, and ^{se gana} wins for himself the esteem of all by (con) his good manners. 13. In a battle, the balls are for the soldiers and the glory for the general. 14. The first railway established in Spain was that from Barcelona to Mataró, about the year 1848.

LESSON XXXV.

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS.

270. The most used conjunctions are :

mas, but; ni, nor; ni . . . ni, neither . . . nor; ó (ú before o or ho), or; ó . . . ó, either . . . or; pero, but; que, that; si, if; sino, but; y, and (é before i or hi, except at the beginning of an interrogation: as, ¿ y Inés ?;—or *hie* where *ie* is diphthong: as, tigre y hiena; nieves y hielos).

271. Other much-used conjunctions¹ are :

that, que á fin (de) que, in order that; á ménos que, unless; ántes que, before; así, so; áun, even; como, as; con que, so; con tal que, provided; conforme, as; miéntras, whilst; no obstante, notwithstanding; para que, in order that; por consiguiente, consequently; por eso, therefore; por miedo, for fear; porque, because; porqué, why; pues, since, then; respecto, regarding; sea . . . sea, either . . . or; sin embargo, however; sobre, thereupon; tampoco, nor, neither; ya . . . ya, now . . . now; ya que, since.

272. (a) If the clause begins with no, ni may be used but once, or be repeated : as, no descansa ni de dia ni de noche, or no descansa de dia ni de noche. But if the verb comes last, no is not used : as, ni de dia ni de noche descansa. (b) Pero and mas (each meaning but) are generally interchangeable. Sino, with same meaning, requires a negative to precede, whose

¹ Many words and expressions not given here are sometimes used as conjunctions.

both . . . and: así . . . como
 not only . . . but: no { solo } . . . sino
 { solamente }

meaning *sino*¹ contradicts: as, *el no habla sino alemán*; *no hablo francés sino inglés*; *hablo inglés pero no hablo francés*.

273. No attempt will be made to divide the interjections into classes, since the same exclamation may express joy, sadness, surprise, etc., according to the connection in which it is written or the tone in which it is uttered. The principal interjections are :

ah!, *ah!*; *ay!*, *ay!*; *bah!*, *bah!*; *ca!* denotes negation or incredulity; *cáspita!* denotes surprise; *ea!*, encouragement, silence, etc.; *eh!* indicates a call or question; *guay!* denotes a threat; *hola!*, a call to inferiors, or denotes joy or surprise; *huy!*, *dear me!*, *oh!*; *oh!*, *oh!*; *ojalá!*, *O that!*, *would that!*; *ox!*, used to frighten birds or fowl; *puf!*, *ugh!*; *quía!*, same as *ca*; *sus!*, *cheer up!*; *tate!*, *take care!*; *uf!*, *oh!* (weariness); *zape!*, *scat!*, or *God forbid!*

274. When adjectives are used as interjections, *de* follows them: as, *¡desdichado de mí!* *¡infeliz de mi hijo!*, *oh my unhappy child!*; and *ay!*, meaning *woe!* or *alas!*, is followed by *de* before words referring to persons: as, *¡ay de tí!*, *alas for thee!*; *¡ay de mi hijo!*, *alas for my son!*

275. (a) Many expressions are used as interjections, though generally otherwise used or taken from other languages: as,

bien!, *well!*; *cuidado!*, *take care!*; *Dios mio!*, *goodness!*; *hola,* *poco á poco!*, *holla,* *gently!*; *hurra!*, *hurrah!*; *muera!*, *down with!*; *otra,* *otra!* *encore!* *qué lástima!*, *what a pity!*; *qué vergüenza!*, *what a shame!*; *quita!*, *pshaw!*; *viva!*, *hurrah!*.

(b) *Héte!*, *behold thou!*, is used with personal pronouns as direct objects: as, *héteme aquí!*, *behold me here!*.

¹ Verb generally understood: when expressed, *pero* or *mas* generally used.

VOCABULARY XXXV.

el escribano, <i>scribe.</i>	bandear (-se), <i>to shift for one's self.</i>
grito, <i>cry.</i>	caminar, <i>to walk.</i>
hielo, <i>ice.</i>	con (por)...que, <i>however.</i>
secuaz, <i>follower.</i>	cuidar (-se), <i>to take care of one's health.</i>
la crianza, <i>breeding.</i>	enfermar (-se), <i>to become ill.</i>
determinacion, <i>determina-</i>	indispuesto, <i>indisposed.</i>
hiena, <i>hyena.</i>	por más, <i>however (great).</i>
instancia, <i>solicitation.</i>	(de) prisa, <i>fast (hastily).</i>
nieve, <i>snow.</i>	puesto que, <i>since (although).</i>
arrancar, <i>to root out.</i>	semejara, <i>to resemble.</i>
asiduo, <i>asiduous.</i>	tildar, <i>to censure.</i>
¡ay dolor!, <i>alas!</i>	

EXERCISE XXXV.-

1. Me dijo que lo sabía, pero (*or mas*) parece que no es verdad. 2. La pobre mujer salió, no obstante que estaba indispueta. 3. Lo dijo á fin de que conociesen su determinacion. 4. Digo bien : si (*for*) no hay cosa que yo haga que no se tilde y riña. 5. Es menester que se cuide V.; porque si no, se enfermará. 6. Por (más) horrible que sea el vicio, siempre encuentra secuaces. 7. No sólo habla bien el señor, sino que escribe muy elegantemente. 8. Dice que no tiene dinero, pues (*and yet*) le he dado ayer 10 duros. 9. No entiendo lo que V. dice, ni (lo que) quiere decir. 10. Más semejaba á su padre que á su madre ni á su tia. 11. No tuvo ni hambre ni sed. 12. No descubre ni el menor indicio. 13. Puesto que no sabe nada y que nadie gusta de él, se ha hecho soldado. 14. Dió un grito que pareció se le había arrancado el alma. 15. No quise tomar para mí más que la cuarta parte por más instancias que me hizo. 16. Con ser tan asi-

dua apénas gana la muchacha la vida. 17. ¡ Alabado (bendito) sea Dios!

12, 14 ed > 5
Fr. ...
THEME XXXV.

1. I rest because I am tired and have a little (of) time. 2. We may go now since our fathers give us permission. 3. I have given him the book that he may learn his lesson. 4. I did not walk very fast, but (or yet) I arrive in time. 5. However great a man may be, he should always be humble. 6. Both the knowledge of books and of men is necessary. 7. Good breeding is not [the] work of nature, but of a good education. 8. They were not content, nor did they wish to do what the captain had ordered. 9. He was hungry and not thirsty. 10. He who knows how to shift for himself is king, however little he may have. 11. Scarcely had they finished killing him when they repented. 12. Since the scribe does not come, it is necessary to write to him. 13. He works in order to be able to be useful to society. 14. What a horse these people lose which, on account of ignorance, they do not know how to make use of [it]. 15. But alas! (the) truth is that if they know anything, it is only to deceive. 16. How¹ unfortunate he is! How kind his father is!

¹ Qué.

SKETCH OF THE HISTORY OF THE
SPANISH LANGUAGE,

. ESPECIALLY IN ITS RELATION WITH LATIN.

THE history of a language is of necessity intimately associated with that of the people by whom it has been developed ; and so true is this of Spanish that no satisfactory view of its development can be had without at least some general knowledge of the history of Spain. Faint as is the light that shines on early Spanish history, it seems to reveal a homogeneous people there, called by the Greeks Iberians. If, as is generally assumed, the Basques, a people of about 620,000 souls, and living both in France and Spain (500,000 in Spain) about the west end of the Pyrenees Mountains, retaining their primitive language, are the descendants of the Iberians, we may, of course, learn much of what we may call the primitive historical language of the country. So different is the Basque, not simply from all surrounding but from all other known languages, and so exclusive and conservative are the Basques as a people, that in the main at least we may assume both language and people of early Spain to have been quite similar to the Basque and the Basques of to-day. The language of the Iberians has scarcely left a well-defined trace in the Spanish of to-day (unless it be the aversion to the *f*, which exists only in foreign words in the Basque); but the general mental, moral, and physical make-up of the Iberians has doubtless wielded a great though now

untraceable influence over the Spanish, and especially upon its sounds. Fine-looking, healthy, vigorous, though not large; good workmen and soldiers, and remarkable sailors; at once conservative in mingling little with other peoples, and radical in their treatment of women (who have the same rights as man); superstitious and at times bloodthirsty; cheerful and not free from coarseness; generally open-hearted and true, but not without cunning; ambitious for themselves and proud of their country and people; lovers of music and display in dress, but through all sensible till excited, then bigoted, obstinate, relentless,—such are the Basques; and such in general were almost without doubt the Iberians: and it was to these people that the Latin language, literature, and civilization came, and by whom chiefly they have been transformed into the Spanish language, literature, and civilization of to-day.

While not without a culture of their own, so overwhelming was the power of the superior culture of the Latin that the Iberians succeeded in imposing only a very few words on the new language, and even these deal “with the simplest natural objects or the simplest relations of life.” About 530 B.C. the Celts found their way from France into the northwestern part of Spain and formed with the Iberians one people under the name of Celtiberians, a people not without the culture of the times. The oldest colony in Spain was founded by the Phœnicians at Cadiz, and there were other flourishing Phœnician colonies in the seventh century B.C. The Greeks had no colonies there, except one or two on the east coast; but Greek as the commercial language of the Mediterranean

countries was used in Spain, and not without influence on the language of the country.

The Carthagenians founded Cartagena (Carthago Nova) 230 B.C. So rapid was the progress of the Carthagenian in mastering the then wealthy country that they aroused the jealousy of the Romans, who, after conquering them in the second Punic war (218-201), compelled them to leave the country and undertook the conquest and Latinizing of Spain. After many attempts in which they often seemed successful, the Romans under Augustus (27-25) conquered the country, and "by 19 B.C. regular, armed resistance to them, even from the mountain districts, seems to have ceased." The Roman skill in Latinizing foreign peoples was brought to bear, and by the numerous ways that conquerors have of imposing their language (when it is the finer developed tongue) on the conquered, and especially by their soldiers and colonists, the Romans made theirs the language of the peninsula. Latin was so mastered by the people of the peninsula that Cicero refers to a whole school of Latin-speaking poets at Cordova (which had a truly flourishing Latin period), and some of the greatest Latin writers (the two Senecas, Lucan, Quintilian, Martial, etc.) and the emperor Trajan were Spaniards, and the emperor Hadrian's ancestors lived in Spain. With the waning of the Roman power in Spain the classical Latin loosened its hold on the country, and the Latin of the Roman soldiers and uneducated colonists (which differed materially from classic speech), modified by the people (Spaniards) among whom it had been used, became the language of the country.

From the discordant elements mentioned above—

Iberian, Celtic, Phœnician, Greek, Roman—there arose at first a number of similar Latin dialects (as Portuguese, Castilian, Catalan, etc.), rather than one language of the whole country. Some of the dialects, as the Catalan, persisted, and two (the Portuguese and the Castilian) rose to the dignity of languages. In spite of all adverse influences, Spain was more thoroughly Latinized than any other province out of Italy, and the Spaniards, who before the Roman conquest were the most cultured people on whom the Romans imposed their language, may have very properly regarded themselves as Romans.

In 256 A.D. Spain was invaded and ravaged by the Franks, but they were soon driven from the country. Toward the fifth century commerce and civilization were on a firm footing, and some of the cities were among the finest in the Roman Empire. In the same year that Rome was sacked by Alaric (409 A.D.) the Alani, Suevi, and Vandals ravaged Spain. The Visigoths entered Spain (414–415), drove out the Alani, Suevi, and Vandals, and on the ruins of the old Roman province founded the Gothic Kingdom, with Toledo as capital, which lasted from the middle of the fifth century to 711, when that kingdom fell before the Arab or Saracen invasion. Though possessed of a certain culture of their own, the Visigoths could not finally banish the language they found there (though the Gothic may have ruled for a time in church and state); and when in the latter part of the sixth century they and their king Recared abandoned Arianism and went over to the Roman Catholic Church, the supremacy of the language of Rome was

assured, though the Gothic alphabet was not given up till 1091.

The Arabs (in 711) conquered Spain and, being a comparatively humane, tolerant, and really highly cultured people, succeeded in imposing much of their language on those among whom they came. Many of the people of Spain withdrew from the South rather than submit to the Arab rule (the Arabs entered Spain from Northern Africa), and finally succeeded (in the year of the discovery of America, 1492), after nearly 800 years, in driving the Mohammedans (infidels or Moors, as the Spaniards called them) from the country.

Shortly before this the various provinces of Spain had been united by the marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella, and the supremacy of the Castilian, which Alfonso the Wise had made the literary language of the country, was politically established. The Castilian had thus become what it has ever since remained, the language of the government, court, and culture, and extended its rule for a time over the neighboring countries. After having crossed to America and established itself there, the Spanish, especially through its magnificent literature, domineered in Germany; Flanders, Italy, France, and even for a time in England. It played a rôle similar to that of the French in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. It was studied, written and spoken, and poetry was written in it, in many other lands as well as in Spain.

The French, through the church at first and afterward through its own supremacy and the almost universal rule of France, was, as was also the Italian, not without influence upon Spanish; and at present other

countries as well, such as England, Germany, the vast Central and South American colonies, are contributing at least a few words to the Spanish language (and politically the Constitution of the United States is having a marked influence upon the ideals and hopes of Spanish liberals). In spite of all this so varied increase of its word-treasure or vocabulary, Spanish has so transformed its acquisitions that they do not prevent it from remaining a very uniform language.

This is because the Latin, first heard in Spain perhaps when the Romans made a treaty with the Spanish seaport town of Saguntum (years before Hannibal's time), persisted amid the cruelties of war and the severities of Roman rule, and was more firmly established by the influence of the splendid Latin literature, and of the Christian Church through the need for a common medium of communication (before which even the Goths and Arabs had to yield); so that in the main all foreign influences and additions to the language have been subjected to the linguistic laws of the predominant Latin element. Remembering, then, that popular Latin is by far the most important element in the Spanish of to-day, let us note hastily and simply in outline some of the changes that Latin underwent to become Spanish. As early as the second half of the third century the accented syllable in popular Latin was generally long, the unaccented syllable or syllables short. In Spanish the accented syllable, which in general is the same as the Latin (popular) one, is the only long one. Although the final vowel of the Latin infinitive and of some other forms fell away and thus gave the Spanish a number of words ending in a consonant, the vast ma-

jority of Spanish words end in vowels, even though many of them, at least in some of their forms, did not end in vowels in Latin.

OF THE LATIN VOWELS IN SPANISH WORDS,

a generally remains : as, **mano** (*manum*); **amamos** (*amamus*).

e generally remains : as, **lleno** (*plenum*); **creo** (*credo*);—or becomes *ie* : as, **bien** (*bene*); **tiene** (*tenet*), **siete** (*septem*).

i generally remains : as, **hijo** (*filium*); **fin** (*finem*); **oir** (*audire*); **triste** (*tristem*);—or becomes *e* : as, **fe** (*fidem*); **pez** (*pisces*).

o generally remains : as, **don** (*donum*); **como** (*quomodo*);—or becomes *ue* : as, **bueno** (*bonum*); **fuego** (*focum*); **mueve** (*movet*); **nueve** (*novem*).

u generally remains : as, **duro** (*durum*); **pluma** (*plumam*); **dulce** (*dulcem*);—or becomes *o* : as, **lobo** (*lupum*); **plomo** (*plumbum*); **con** (*cum*); **somos** (*sumus*); **soy** (*sum*).

au generally becomes *o* : as, **oro** (*aurum*); **cosa** (*causam*).

Many diphthongs are now represented by a single letter : as, **Eneas** (*Æneas*); **Edipus** (*Ædipus*). The accented long vowels in Latin generally remain in Spanish; the accented short vowels generally undergo changes. While the unaccented long vowels in Latin generally remain, the unaccented short vowels often disappear.

Of the Latin consonants the general remark must be made that their position as initial, medial, or final had much to do with their fate in the Spanish. An

initial consonant *generally* remains unchanged : as, **padre** (*patrem*); **madre** (*matrem*).

Of the final consonants *n, r, s* remain : as, **somos** (*sumus*), etc.;—*t* falls away, and *nt* becomes **n** : as, **son** (*sunt*);—*st* becomes **s** : as, **es** (*est*);—*l* is lost when unaccented;—*d* falls away : as, **á** (*ad*);—*m* remains sometimes as **n** : as, **con** (*cum*).

The medial consonants undergo important changes which can be mentioned here only in general terms. Medials often fall away : as, **rio** (*rivum*);—or undergo other transformations : as, **abuelo** (*avolum*); **lirio** (*lilium*); **pajaro** (*passerem*); **cocer** (*coquere*); **restañar** (*stagnare*); **sueño** (*somnum*); **hombre** (*hominem*), a fifteenth-century transformation; **milagro** (*miraculum*); **trigo** (*triticum*). Late in the fourteenth century **h** began to be written for *f*, and now many words have the **h** for *f* : as, **hacer** (*facere*).

DECLENSIONS.

Only the first, second, and third Latin declensions have remained in Spanish, and of these but one case, the accusative (both singular and plural) : as, **rosa** (*rosam*), **rosas**;¹ **año** (*annum*), **años**; **llave** (*clavem*), **llaves**; **flor** (*florem*), **flores**. The Latin fourth declension was treated as the second : as, **fruto** (*fructum*), **frutos**, and the fifth as the third : as, **fe** (*fidem*); but **dia** (*diem*). Even the three declensions remaining in Spanish are now treated simply as three forms of one declension. A few nominative Latin forms have

¹ *s*, being the more usual ending of the Latin acc. plur., was finally applied to all singular forms to make the Spanish plurals.

been retained : **as**, **Júpiter**, **lápiz**, **doble**, **yo**, **tú**, **este**, **ese**. **Mártés** (*dies Martis*) is genitive. Datives are **mí**, **tí**, **sí**, **le** ([il] li), **les** ([il] lis), while **me**, **te**, **se**, **quien** (*quem*), **alguien** are accusatives. **Como** (*quomodo*) and adverbs in **mente** are ablatives. Changes from one declension to another otherwise than as indicated seldom occur.

The definite-article forms are : **el** (*il[lum]*); **la** (*[il]la[m]*), and **el** (*il[lam]*) before feminines of two syllables beginning with **a** or **ha**; **le** (*[il]li*); **los** (*[il]los*); **las** (*[il]las*); **lo** (*[il]lu[d]*). The indefinite article is **un** (*un[um]*); **una** (*una[m]*).

The rules for the derivation of the adjectives are the same as for nouns of the same endings. **Más** (*magis*), **ménos** (*minus*) are used in comparison and a few Latin comparatives : **as**, **mayor** (*maior*); **peor** (*paior*); **mejor** (*melior*); **menor** (*minor*);—and a number in **ísimo** (*isimus*) have remained, but those in **ísimo** with only an intensive force.

Numerals are **uno** (*unum*), **una** (*unam*); we find in the thirteenth century the forms **dues** (*duos*), **duas** (*duas*), whence **dos** of the modern Spanish. Other forms are **cuatro** (*quattuor*), etc.

The personal pronouns are : **yo** (*ego*) with accent change in Spanish, the accent being on the **o** of **yo**; **mí** (*mihi*); **me** (*me*); **tú** (*tu*); **ti** (*tibi*); **te** (*te*); **nos**, **nosotros** (*nos, nos alteros*); **vos**, **vosotros** (*vos, vos alteros*); **si** (*sibi*); **se** (*se*), (the **se** in **selo**, etc., according to Schuchardt, comes from *ipse*); **le** dative (*[il]li*), both masculine and feminine; **el** (*il[le]*), etc. (see article).

The forms of possession **mio** (*meum*), etc., also the

shorter **mi**, etc., as well as **cuyo** (*cuius*), are from the Latin.

The demonstrative **el** is similar in derivation to the definite article. Other forms are **ese** (*ipse*); **este** (*iste*); **aquel** (a compound with *ecce*).

As relatives and interrogatives **que**,¹ **qué** represent *qui*, *quod*, *quis*, *quid*; **quien**, **quién** (*quem*); **cual**, **cuál** (*qual[em]*); **cuyo** (*cuius*).

Indefinite pronouns are **otro** (*alterum*); **nada** (*rem natam*); **alguno** (*aliquem unum*, probably); **algo** (*aliquid*); **ninguno** (*necunum*), etc.

CONJUGATION.

In general, the first conjugation of the Latin corresponds to the first in Spanish, the second and third of the Latin to the Spanish second, and the fourth of the Latin to the Spanish third: as, first, **amar** (*amare*); second, **temer** (*timēre*), **leer** (*legēre*); third, **partir** (*partire*). Several forms of the Latin conjugation have been lost, as the future indicative, imperfect and perfect subjunctive, etc., and some other forms have changed their use (as the Latin present participle, used as a noun or adjective in Spanish). New forms are the future active and the conditional, which are made up of the present infinitive of the verb to be conjugated with the present and imperfect indicative of **haber**: as, **amar hé** (for *habeo*) (*amaré*); **amar había** (*amaría*). This use of the auxiliary dates, according to Förster, well back in Latin times, and he quotes the following: “*qui sedent vel sedere habebunt;*” “*si interrogatus fueris quomodo dicere habes;*”

¹ Old Spanish **qui**.

“*Deus satisfacere tibi habet*”—who sit or will have to sit ; if you shall be asked how you have to speak ; God has to (will) satisfy you.

Other new forms are the perfect, pluperfect,¹ and future perfect (all three having **haber** as auxiliary), and the whole passive voice. The compound passive forms began even in early Latin periods to be used for the others : as, *quæ ibi sunt aspecta* (= *aspiciuntur*) ; *sicut a nobis præsentē tempore est possessum possidetur*, etc. ;—and in Spanish they (the compound forms) have driven out the other forms, i.e. the regular Latin passive.

By comparing a few verb-forms we may make the differences and similarities of the two languages more easily understood.

INFINITIVE.		PRESENT INDICATIVE.		
Lat.	<i>amare</i>	<i>amo, amas, amat, amamus, -atis, -ant</i>		
Sp.	amar	amo, amas, ama, amamos, -ais, -an		
PRES. SUBJ.		IMPERFECT IND.	IMPERATIVE PRES.	
Lat.	<i>amem</i>	<i>timebam</i>	<i>partite</i>	
Sp.	ame	temía	partid	
GERUND.		PERF. IND.	PERFECT.	
Lat.	<i>amando</i>	<i>timuerunt</i>	<i>ama(v)i partivi</i>	
GER. OF PRES. PART.		PRET.	PRETERITE.	
Sp.	amando	temieron	amé	partí

From this comparison it becomes evident that *m*, as well as *t* final, falls away ; that *s* remains ; that *d*, *n*, and *r* remain ; that *v* falls away (though in the third person Lat. perfect *partivit* [*partiu*], Sp. **parti6**, the *v* becomes *u*, then **6**) ; that *b* is sometimes retained (in first conjugation imperfect), and sometimes lost (as

¹ Under pluperfect we may understand here compound both of imperfect and of preterite.

in imperfect of **temer**, **temía**, for *timebam*). The Lat. imperfect of the fourth conjugation ends in *iebam*, which gives the Sp. preterite ending **ía** (as *partiebam*, **partía**), and this ending by analogy was carried to the Spanish imperfect of the second as well as the third conjugation, as **temía** (*timebam*).

Nazco, **nazca**; **parezco**, **parezca**; **conozco**, **conozca** are cited as the only remaining traces of the Latin inchoative conjugation. The change from Latin *habui*, *sapui*, *posui*, *potui* to **hube**, **supe**, **puse**, **pude** is noteworthy.

The Spanish form of the gerund (called the present participle in this book) is that of the ablative in Latin. After first being used as the ablative of instrument and with prepositions as a present participle, it finally took the place of the Latin present participle in all cases.

The formation of adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions, and interjections may be illustrated by the following words: **entónces** (*ex tunc*); **nunca** (*nunquam*); **casi** (*quasi*); **sí** (*sic*); **quizá**, **quizás** (*quis sapit*); **para** (*pro ad*, this combination occurs in Middle Latin); **pos** (*post*) in **en pos de**; **segun** (*secundum*); **sino** (*si non*); **pero** (*per hoc*); **héte** (*ved, hed, het*); **mira !**, **brava cosa !** (ironical).

The above will serve to show in some degree how important an element Latin is in Spanish. It should be borne in mind that not the popular Latin alone, but the classical (largely introduced by the scholars, who here, as in France, were a disturbing element in the development of the language), and even the Latin of the middle ages (which was neither a popular nor a classical speech) contributed much to the Spanish.

It was the popular Latin, however, that not only gave the greater number of words, but determined the genius of the language; and yet very many of the divergences in syntax, etc., of the Spanish from the Latin had their beginnings in Latin itself, and not always in the popular tongue only; such are: the victory of accent over quantity; the use of *ille* very much as modern article; of such words as *caballus* (**caballo**) instead of the more usual classic form *equus*; the use of diminutives, now excessive in Spanish, as *abuelo* (*avulus*, dim. of *avus*); of prepositions rather than the different case-forms to denote case-relations; of *magis* (**más**) in comparison instead of the comparative terminations; the formation of the future and conditional by the use of *to have* as auxiliary; the use of compound forms instead of the regular passive forms, etc. Spanish is then one of the sister-languages which, since the time of Diez, the father of the philology of these languages, have been called the Romance languages, and included, according to Diez, Italian and Wallachian in the east, Spanish and Portuguese in the southwest, French and Provençal in the northwest, and the Catalan in eastern Spain; to which the Rætoromanic (spoken in Engadine, the extreme eastern part of Switzerland) and Franco-Provençal (spoken in the extreme western part of Switzerland and the neighboring part of France) are now added.

It has been very justly said that "the influence of the Goths and Arabs was felt in the development of the sounds and of the vocabulary of the language. Greek made its impression first through the Greek colonies (though they were very few and confined to

the northeast coast), then through Latin and as the language of commerce of the countries about the Mediterranean Sea, and through the spread of Christianity which carried with it Greek words in Latin forms. After the disappearance of the Iberian and Celtic, the Basque exerted a not unimportant influence."

Effort has been made to estimate the number of words some languages have given to Spanish, and it is supposed that Gothic (including the German) has contributed between three and four hundred words, such as : Goth. *vitan* (observe) = Spanish *guiar*, *to guide*; O.H.G. *wis*, N.H.G. *weise* = Sp. *guisa* (*obs.*); Ags. *east* = Sp. *este*; Ger. *helm* = Sp. *yelmo* (*helmet*).

The Basque, Celtic, and Iberian have together given the Spanish about one hundred words: as, Basque *murua* (*hill*), Sp. *moron* (*hill*); Basque *bero-ur-ga*, Sp. *burga*, *warm medicinal spring*; Iberian and Sp. *celia* (*a kind of wheat-beer*), *obs.*

The Arabic gave the Spanish between six and seven hundred words which are chiefly names of common objects, technical terms of natural science, medicine, mathematics, astronomy, music, and statecraft. Many of them begin with *al* (which is the Arabic article), though *l* is sometimes brought into a word: as, *almirante* (*admiral*). Some representative Arabic words in Spanish are: *al-djabr*, Sp. *algebra*; *no'mán-ibn Mondhir* (*king of Hira*), Sp. *anémona* (*anemone*); *az-zait*, Sp. *aceite* (*oil*); *al-cotn*, Sp. *algodon* (*cotton*). It is from the Arabic words and those of Phœnician origin (somewhat like the Hebrew) that Spanish has, more by far than any of its sister Romance languages, an oriental appearance.

The following Greek words are given by way of

illustration: *βύρσα* (mod. Lat. *byrsa*), Sp. *bolsa* (*purse*); *ἡμικρανία*, Sp. *migraña* (*headache*); *φάρός*, Sp. *fanal* (*ship-light* or *light-house*).

The following is Körting's summing-up of the characteristics of Spanish: "The purity and clearness of the vowels, viz. the absence of all modified and nasal vowels, gives to the Spanish richness of sound, the numerous final consonants energy; the regularity of the accent on the last or next to the last syllable gives preciseness and dignity; the frequent occurrence of the guttural sound of *j*¹ roughness, the relatively frequent occurrence of the palatal *ch* ruggedness. Of all Romance languages the Spanish, so far as its sounds are concerned, has perhaps remained most like the Latin and best preserved its (Latin's) vigor." The Spaniards themselves say of their native tongue that "it is the language of the gods."

Spanish is spoken in Europe by more than ten millions (some seven millions in Spain speak Catalan, Galician, and Basque) and probably by more than twenty millions in America (North and South), and, as the language of our southern neighbors and of a large part of South America, is of real importance to us as Americans. There are about one hundred thousand Spanish-speaking persons in the French-African province of Oran, and about one hundred thousand Spanish-speaking Jews in the Turkish Empire. Spanish is the most widely spoken of the Romance languages.

It would be out of place to speak at any length here

¹ The Spanish sound of *j* is not taken from the Arabic, but is a late development based rather on the Germanic element.

of the literature of the language, so a few words must suffice. Beginning with the poem of the "Cid" (middle of the twelfth century) and the works of Alfonso the Wise (middle of the thirteenth century), the Spanish passed through a period of great splendor in the first half of the seventeenth century, when its influence was the most important of the times, and when Cervantes, Lope de Vega, and Calderon added the splendor of their productions to the national literary treasure. After a long period of almost uninterrupted literary inactivity since that time, the Spanish has recently shown unmistakable signs of literary vigor, and in the writings of Harzenbusch, Fernan Caballero (a woman), Zorrilla, Trueba, José de Espronceda, Valdés, Juan Valera (a critic, as well as romance-writer, who is introducing American writers of Spanish to the literary world), Echegaray (a dramatist of unusual power) and others, Spain has entered upon what is not unlikely to prove a brilliant literary period.

Since foreign books may be had at much less cost and inconvenience than formerly (the duty on all but English books being now removed), it is to be hoped that the recent revival of interest in Spanish, which has arisen from our nearer commercial relations with Spanish-speaking countries, may be made permanent both by intimate and permanent commercial and political relations with those countries, and by our enjoying and properly estimating the many masterly productions of the Spanish people, to whom we as Americans owe so much.

SPANISH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

Abbreviations: *f.*, feminine noun; *m.*, masculine noun.

- á*, for, to, at
abandonar, to abandon
abogado, m., advocate, lawyer
abolir, to abolish
aborrecer, to hate
abrazar, to embrace
abrigar, to shelter
abrigo, m., shelter
abril, m., April
abrir, to open
abuela, f., grandmother
acabado, achieved
acabar, to finish
acaecer, to happen
acaso, perhaps
acaudalado, wealth
accion, f., action
acento, m., accent
aceptar, to accept
acerca de, about, concerning
acercando (acercar), approach-
acertar, to hit the mark [ing
acoger, to receive
acompañar, to accompany
aconsejador, m., counsellor
aconsejar, to advise, to counsel
acontecer, to happen
acordar (-se) to remember, to
 agree, to remind
acostar (-se), to go to bed [self)
acreditar (-se), to prove (one's
acribillado, drubbed
activo, active
acudir, to come (to help), to
 come (by appointment)
acusar, to accuse
adelanto, m., advancement
aderezar, to prepare (victuals)
administrar, administer
admiracion, f., wonder
admirar, to admire
admitir, to admit
adornado (adornar), adorned
adquirir, to acquire
advertir, to inform
á fin de que, to the end that
afirmar, to affirm
agitar, to agitate
agosto, m., August
agradable, agreeable
agradar, to please
agradecer, to thank
agrícola, m. & f., agricultural
agrío, sour
agua, f., water
aguar, to mix with water
aguardar, to wait
ahora, now

- aire, *m.*, air, wind
 ajeno (-a), another's
 (al, to the)
 alabar, to praise
 alargar, to pass, reach
 alcance, *m.*, pursuit
 alcanzar, to reach
 aldea, *f.*, hamlet
 alegrar, to please
 alegrar (-se), to rejoice
 alegre, joyful
 alegría, *f.*, joy
 algo, anything, something
 alguien, somebody, some one
 alguno, some one, somebody,
 aliento, *m.*, breath [some
 allá, there (motion)
 allí, there (rest)
 alma, *f.*, soul
 almacén, *m.*, store
 almendra, *f.*, almond
 almorzar, to breakfast
 altanero, haughty
 alto, *m.*, halt
 alto, high, tall
 alzarse, to arise
 amable, amiable
 amar, to love
 ámbar, *m.*, amber
 ambición, *f.*, ambition
 ambicioso, ambitious
 ambiguo, ambiguous
 ambos, both
 amenazar, to threaten
 á manudo, often
 americano, American
 amigo, *m.*, friend
 amiga, *f.*, friend
 amigote, *m.*, great friend
 amiguillo, *m.*, little friend
 amistad, *f.*, friendship
 amo, *m.*, master
 amontonar, to amass
 amor, *m.*, love
 amparar, to protect
 ancho, broad
 (de ancho, of width)
 anciana, *f.*, old woman
 anciano, *m.*, old man
 andante, errant
 andar, to go
 anillo, *m.*, ring
 animal, *m.*, animal
 ánimo, *m.*, mind
 año, *m.*, year
 anoche, last night
 ántes, before
 ántes de, } before
 ántes que, }
 antiguo, old, ancient
 antojo, *m.*, whim
 anunciar, to announce
 apartarse, to separate
 apearse, dismount
 apénas, scarcely
 apetito, *m.*, appetite
 apoderar, to get possession
 aprender, to learn
 aprieto, *m.*, difficult situation
 aprobar, to approve [táge
 aprovechar (-se), to take advan-
 aquel, that (yonder) of time,
 before or after any time
 aquello (-a), that
 aquel que, etc., he who, etc.
 aquello que, etc., that which
 aquese, that
 aqueste, this

- aquí, here
 arado, *m.*, plough
 árbol, *m.*, tree
 arma, *f.*, arm (weapon)
 armonía, *f.*, harmony
 arrancar, to root out
 arreglar, to put in order [ance
 arrepentimiento, *m.*, repent-
 arrepentir (-se), to repent
 arroyo, *m.*, brook
 arruinar, to ruin
 artes, *f.*, intrigues, arts
 arzobispo, *m.*, archbishop
 asador, *m.*, spit (stick)
 asaltar, to assault
 asalto, *m.*, assault
 asegurar, to assure
 así, so, thus
 asiduo, assiduous
 asiento, *m.*, seat
 asir, to seize
 asno, *m.*, ass
 astro, *m.*, star
 asunto, *m.*, subject
 atacar, to attack
 atención, *f.*, attention
 atender, to mind, heed, attend
 atentamente, attentively
 atento, attentive
 á todo lo largo, all along
 atractivo, attractive
 atreverse, to venture
 aumentar, to augment
 aun, even
 aunque, although
 ausencia, *f.*, absence
 ausente, absent
 autor, *m.*, author
 autoridad, *f.*, authority
 auxilio, *m.*, help
 avanzado, advance
 avanzar, to advance
 avasallar, to enslave
 ave, *f.*, bird
 avecica, *f.*, little bird
 avenida, *f.*, inundation
 avenir, to agree, to join
 aventura, *f.*, adventure
 avergonzar, to be ashamed
 avisar, to inform, advise
 ¡ay dolor!, alas!
 ayer, yesterday
 ayuda, *f.*, aid
 azul, blue
 bailar, to dance
 baile, *m.*, ball
 bajar, to descend
 bajo, under, low, softly
 bala, *f.*, ball (shot)
 baladí, frivolous
 ballena, *f.*, whale
 bañado (-a), bathed
 bañarse, to bathe one's self
 banco, *m.*, bank
 bandearse, to shift for one's self
 bandera, *f.*, flag
 banquero, *m.*, banker
 banquete, *m.*, banquet
 barbaridad, *f.*, barbarity
 barbaro, *m.*, barbarian
 bastar, to be enough
 bastonazo, *m.*, blow with a stick
 batalla, *f.*, battle
 baul, *m.*, trunk
 beber, to drink
 bello, beautiful
 bendecir, to bless

beneficentísimo , very beneficent	caer , to fall
beneficio , <i>m.</i> , benefit, favor	café , <i>m.</i> , coffee, café
besamanos , <i>m.</i> , kissing of the hand, salute	cajon , <i>m.</i> , chest
biblioteca , <i>f.</i> , library	calentura , <i>f.</i> , fever
bien , well	calidad , <i>f.</i> , quality
bien , <i>m.</i> , good	cálido , hot
bledo , <i>m.</i> , wild amaranth	callar , to keep silent
boca , <i>f.</i> , mouth	calle , <i>f.</i> , street
bofetada , <i>f.</i> , slap	calmante , narcotic
bolsa , <i>f.</i> , purse	calor , <i>m.</i> , heat
bolsillo , <i>m.</i> , pocket	cama , <i>f.</i> , bed
bondad , <i>f.</i> , goodness, kind-	cambio , <i>m.</i> , exchange
bonísimo , very good	cambiar , to change
bonito , pretty	caminar , to walk
bosque , <i>m.</i> , woods	camino , <i>m.</i> , way, road
botánica , <i>f.</i> , botany	camino de hierro , <i>m.</i> , railway
breve , short, brief	camisa , <i>f.</i> , shirt
brillante , brilliant	campanario , <i>m.</i> , belfry
bruto , <i>m.</i> , brute	campo , <i>m.</i> , field, country
bueno , good	canapé , <i>m.</i> , couch
buenos dias , good-day	cancion , <i>m.</i> , song
buitre , <i>m.</i> , vulture	candor , <i>m.</i> , candor
buque , <i>m.</i> , ship	cansar , to weary
burla , <i>f.</i> , jest, sport	cantando , recounting
buscar , to look for	cantar , to sing
	cantidad , <i>f.</i> , quantity
cabalgadura , <i>f.</i> , baggage-horse	canto , <i>m.</i> , singing
caballero , <i>m.</i> , horseman, knight	capa , <i>f.</i> , cloak
	capital , <i>f.</i> , capital (city)
caballero andante , <i>m.</i> , knight-	capitan , <i>m.</i> , captain
caballo , <i>m.</i> , horse	cara , <i>f.</i> , face
cabello , <i>m.</i> , hair	cárcel , <i>f.</i> , prison
caber , to be contained	carestía , <i>f.</i> , famine
cabeza , <i>f.</i> , head	carga , <i>f.</i> , charge (obligation)
cabra , <i>f.</i> , goat	cargar , to charge (in account)
cada , each, every	caritativo , charitable
cada cual , cada uno , each,	carne , <i>f.</i> , meat
cadena , <i>f.</i> , chain	carnero , <i>m.</i> , sheep
	carpintero , <i>m.</i> , carpenter

- carruaje**, *m.*, carriage
carta, *f.*, letter
casa, *f.*, house
casar, to marry
casi, almost
casica, *f.*, little house
castigar, chastise
catedral, *f.*, cathedral
caterva, *f.*, crowd
cateto, *m.*, side of right tri-
católico, Catholic [angle
caudal, *m.*, fund
causa, *f.*, cause
causar, to cause
cazar, to chase
cebada, *f.*, barley
cegar, to blind
celeberrimo, very celebrated
cena, *f.*, supper
cerca (de), near
cerrar, to close
chinela, *f.*, slipper
ciego, blind
cielo, *m.*, heaven
ciencia, *f.*, science
científico, scientific
cierto, certain
cinco, five
cincuenta, fifty
circo, *m.*, circus
cirujano, *m.*, surgeon
ciudad, *f.*, city
clase, *f.*, class, rank
clásico, *m.*, classic
clima, *m.*, climate
cocerse, to cook, to boil
coche, *m.*, coach
cocina, *f.*, kitchen
cofre, *m.*, trunk
coger, to catch
cogido (coger), caught
colmar, to overwhelm
colocacion, *f.*, situation
combatir, to combat
comedia, *f.*, comedy
comedor, *m.*, dining-room
comercio, *m.*, commerce
comer, to eat
cometer, to commit
comida, *f.* (repast), meal
como, bow
compacto, compact
compañía, *f.*, company
comparar, to compare
comparecer, to appear
componer, to compose
comprado (comprar), bought
comprar, to buy
comprender, to comprehend
comprobar, to prove (verify)
comprometer, to compromise
con, with
concernir, to concern
concierto, *m.*, concert
concluir, to finish
conde, *m.*, the count
condenar, to condemn
condesa, *f.*, countess
condicion, *f.*, condition
conducir, to conduct
conducta, *f.*, conduct
confesar, to confess
confianza, *f.*, confidence
confiar, to intrust
conform, according to
confundir, to confound
confuso, confused
congreso, *m.*, congress

conjuracion, <i>f.</i> , conspiracy	correr, to run
conjurar, to entreat	corriente, <i>m.</i> , present (month)
conmigo, with me	corriente, current (present)
conocer, to know	corrientemente, fluently
conocido (well) known	cortado (cortar), cut
conocimiento, <i>m.</i> , knowledge	cortaplumas, <i>m.</i> , penknife
con...que, however	cortarse, to cut
conquistar, to conquer	corte, <i>f.</i> , court city (capital)
consecuencia, <i>f.</i> , consequence	cortesmente, politely
conseguir, to obtain	cosa, <i>f.</i> , thing
consejo, <i>m.</i> , advice, counsel	cosecha, <i>f.</i> , harvest
consentir, to consent	costar, to cost
considerar, to consider	costumbre, <i>f.</i> , custom
consigo, with himself, etc.	credito, <i>m.</i> , credit
consistir, to consist	creer, to believe
constancia, <i>f.</i> , constancy [ed	criado, <i>m.</i> , servant
construir (-se), to be construct-	crianza, <i>f.</i> , breeding
consultar, to consult	cristiano, Christian
con tal que, provided that	cuadrado, <i>m.</i> , square
contar, to relate, to count	cuadro, <i>m.</i> , picture
contemporáneo, contemporary	cual... cual, one... another
contentar, to content	cual (el cual, etc.), who, which
contento, content, satisfaction	cuál, who?, which?
contentísimo, very well pleas-	cual, such as
contento, <i>m.</i> , contentment [ed	cualquiera, any, whatever,
contigo, with thee	whichever, wherever
contrahaz, <i>f.</i> , wrong side	cuándo, when
contrario, <i>m.</i> , opposer	cuando, when
controversia, <i>f.</i> , controversy	cuanto (-a, etc.), what, how
convencer, to convince	much, how many, as
conversacion, <i>f.</i> , conversation	cuanto más, the more
convertir, to change	cuanto ménos, the less
convidar, to invite	cuarenta, forty [quarter
convite, <i>m.</i> , invitation	cuarto, <i>m.</i> , farthing, room,
copa, <i>f.</i> , bowerlike branch	cuatro, four
corazon, <i>m.</i> , heart	cubrir, to cover
coronar, to crown	cuchillo, <i>m.</i> , knife
coronel, <i>m.</i> , colonel	cuello, <i>m.</i> , collar
correo, <i>m.</i> , post (office)	cuenta, <i>f.</i> , account

cuento, *m.*, story
 cuerda, *f.*, string
 cuerpo, *m.*, body
 cuesta, *f.*, hill
 cuestion, *f.*, question
 cuidado, *m.*, care
 cuidarse, to take care
 culpa, *f.*, blame
 cultivar, cultivate
 cumplirse, to complete, fulfil
 cura, *m.*, priest
 curarse, to take account
 curioso, curious
 cuyo (-a), whose
 cuyo (-a, etc.), whose?

dama, *f.*, lady
 dando (-dar), giving
 daño, *m.*, loss
 dar, to give
 de, than (*usually* of)
 deber, *m.*, duty
 deber, to be obliged
 decaer, to decline
 decidir, to decide
 decir, to say, tell
 decision, *f.*, decision
 dedo, *m.*, finger
 defender, to defend [self
 degradar(-se), to degrade one's
 dejar, to let, allow, leave,
 delante de, before [cease
 deleitar, to delight
 delicuento, *m.*, criminal
 delinquir, to transgress
 delirante, *m.*, raver
 delito, *m.*, crime
 demasiado, too much
 democrático, democratic

dentro, within
 derecho, *m.*, right
 desanimarse, to be discouraged
 desaparecer, to disappear
 desaprobado, to disapprove
 descanso, *m.*, rest
 desconcertar, to disturb
 desconfiar (de), to distrust
 desconocido, unknown
 descontar, to discount
 describir, to describe
 descubrir, to discover
 descuidar, to neglect
 descuido, *m.*, heedlessness
 desde, since
 desdicha, *f.*, misfortune
 desdichado!, unhappy!
 desear, to desire
 deseo, *m.*, desire
 desertor, *m.*, deserter
 desgracia, *f.*, disgrace
 desgraciado, unfortunate
 desigualdad, *f.*, inequality
 desistir, to desist
 desmayado, fainted
 desmayarse, to faint
 desordenado, lawless
 despacio, slowly
 despedir, dismiss
 despertarse, to awake
 despoblar, to depopulate
 despreciable, despicable
 despreciar, to despise
 despues (de), after
 desterrar, to banish
 destino, *m.*, destiny
 destreza, *f.*, dexterity
 destruir, to destroy
 desventurado, unfortunate

determinacion, <i>f.</i> , determina-	doler, to pain
determinar, to determine [tion	doliente, sorrowful
detestable, detestable	dolor, <i>m.</i> , pain
detrás, behind	domingo, <i>m.</i> , Sunday
deuda, <i>f.</i> , debt	doncella, <i>f.</i> , maiden
devolver, to return	donde, where
devoto, <i>m.</i> , devout (man)	dónde? where?
dia, <i>m.</i> , day	dormir, to sleep
dibujar, to draw	dos, two
dicho (decir), said	dotado, endowed
dichoso, happy	duda, <i>f.</i> , doubt
dictar, to dictate	dudar, to doubt
diez, ten	dueña, <i>f.</i> , lady (married)
diferencia, <i>f.</i> , difference	dueño, <i>m.</i> , owner
diferente, different	dulce, sweet
diferir, to defer	durable, durable
difícil, difficult	durante, during
dificultad, <i>f.</i> , difficulty	durar, to last
diligencia, <i>f.</i> , diligence	duro, <i>m.</i> , dollar
diligente, diligent	duro, hard
dinero, <i>m.</i> , money	
dios quiera, God grant	echar, to throw
diputado, <i>m.</i> , deputy	edad, <i>f.</i> , age
dirigir, to direct	edificado, built
discurrir, to discuss	edificar, to build
disgustar, to disgust	efecto, <i>m.</i> , effect
dispensar, to excuse	ejecucion, <i>f.</i> , execution
disponer, to dispose, arrange	ejemplo, <i>m.</i> , example
disputa, <i>f.</i> , dispute	ejercicio, <i>m.</i> , exercise
distancia, <i>f.</i> , difference	ejército, <i>m.</i> , army
distinguir, to distinguish	el, the
divertirse, to amuse (one's	él, he
dividido, divided [self]	elegantemente, elegantly
doble, double	elegir, to elect
doce, twelve	ello, it
docena, <i>f.</i> , dozen	elocuencia, <i>f.</i> , eloquence
dócil, tractable	elocuentemente, eloquently
docto, learned	ella, she, her
doctrina, <i>f.</i> , doctrine	embajada, <i>f.</i> , embassy

- embarazar, to embarrass
 embarazo, *m.*, perplexity
 emborrachar, to get drunk
 empecer (*obs.*), to offend
 emperador, *m.*, emperor
 empezar, to begin
 emplear, to employ
 empleo, *m.*, place, employ-
 ment, rank
 empresa, *f.*, undertaking
 en, in, on [self
 encaminarse, to betake one's
 encantador, *m.*, enchanter
 encantar, to delight [with
 encontrar, to meet, to meet
 endeudado, in debt
 enero, *m.*, January
 enfadar, to vex
 enfermar (-se), to become ill
 enfermedad, *f.*, disease
 enfermo, *m.*, a sick (man)
 enfrenar, to bridle
 (de) enfrente, opposite
 engañado, deceived
 engañar, to deceive
 enhoramala, *f.*, ill-luck
 enmendar, to improve, reform
 ensartado, strung, linked
 enseñar, to teach
 entender, to understand
 enteramente, entirely [self)
 enterarse, to inform (on'es
 entónces, then
 entrambos, both
 entrar, to enter
 entre, between
 entregado, given, handed
 entregar, to abandon, to hand
 over
 entretender, to entertain
 entristecer, to sadden
 enviado, sent
 enviar, to send
 epidemia, *f.*, epidemic, disease
 equivocarse, to mistake
 erguir, to hold up
 errar, to err
 error, *m.*, error
 erudito, learned
 escaparse, to run off
 esclavo, *m.*, slave
 escoger, to choose
 esconder, to hide
 escopeta, *f.*, gun
 escribano, *m.*, scribe
 escribir, to write
 escrito (-a), written
 escritor, *m.*, writer
 escritura, *f.*, writing
 escuchar, to listen
 escudero, *m.*, shield-bearer
 ese, that (by you)
 esforzado, vigorous
 esforzar, to make efforts
 esfuerzo, *m.*, effort
 esotro (-a), that other
 espacio, *m.*, space
 espada, *f.*, sword
 español, Spanish
 espantar, to frighten
 esparcir, to scatter
 especulation, *f.*, speculation
 esperanza, *f.*, hope
 esperar, to hope, expect
 espíritu, *m.*, spirit
 esposa, *f.*, wife
 esposicion, *f.*, exposition
 establecer, to establish

estacion, *f.*, season
 estado, *m.*, state
 estado, been
 estando, being
 estante, *m.*, shelf
 estar, to be
 estar bien, to become (suit)
 este, this
 estima, *f.*, esteem
 estimacion, *f.*, esteem
 estimado, esteemed
 estimar, to esteem
 esto, this
 estotro (-a), this other
 estrago, *m.*, ravage
 estrella, *f.*, star
 estudiante, *m.*, student
 estudiar, to study
 evidentemente, evidently
 evitar, to avoid
 exceso, *m.*, excess
 exclamar, to exclaim
 experiencia, *f.*, experience
 explicar, to explain
 exponer, to expose
 expresion, *f.*, expression
 extender, to reach
 extranjero, *m.*, stranger
 extraño, *m.*, foreigner
 extravío, *m.*, frenzy

faccion, *f.*, feature
 fachada, *f.*, façade
 fácil, easy
 facilitar, to facilitate
 factura, *f.*, invoice
 falta, *f.*, fault
 faltar, to fail
 faltriquera, *f.*, pocket

fama, *f.*, fame
 famoso, famous
 fatiga, *f.*, fatigue
 favor, *m.*, favor
 favorable, favorable
 favorecido, favored
 faz, *f.*, face
 fe, *f.*, faith
 febrero, *m.*, February
 feliz, happy (good)
 femenino, feminine
 feroz, ferocious
 ferro-carril, *m.*, railway
 fiarse, to trust
 fidelísimo, very faithful
 fiestas (las), holidays
 figura, *f.*, stature (form), character (of play)
 filosofía, *f.*, philosophy
 filósofo, *m.*, philosopher
 fin, *m.*, end
 fingir, to feign
 flor, *f.*, flower
 florear, to flourish
 floreciente, flourishing
 florero, *m.*, flower-pot
 folleto, *m.*, pamphlet
 fortaleza, *f.*, fortress
 fortuna, *f.*, fortune
 fragilidad, *f.*, frailty
 frances, French
 frances, *m.*, Frenchman
 franco, frank
 frecuentar, frequent
 friísimo, very cold
 frio, cold
 fruta, *f.*, fruit
 fruto, *m.*, fruit (on tree)
 fuego, *m.*, fire

fuente, *f.*, spring
 fuera (de), out (of)
 fuerte, strong
 fuerza, *f.*, force
 fulano, such a one
 fundada (*f.*), founded
 funesto, lamentable
 furia, *f.*, fury
 furioso, furious
 fusilazo, *m.*, a gun-shot

 gala, *f.*, ornament
 gana, *f.*, desire, inclination
 ganapan, *m.*, porter
 ganar, to gain
 gastar, to spend
 general, *m.*, general
 generalmente, generally
 genio, *m.*, genius
 gente, *f.*, people
 gigante (-a), gigantic
 girar, to turn
 gloria, *f.*, glory
 gobernar, to govern
 gobierno, *m.*, government
 gozar, to enjoy
 gramática, *f.*, grammar
 grande, large, great
 grande, *m.*, grandee
 granjear, to win
 griego, Greek
 gris, gray
 grito, *m.*, cry
 guante, *m.*, glove
 guardar, to keep, to watch
 guerra, *f.*, war
 guerrero, *m.*, warrior
 gustar, to please
 gusto, *m.*, pleasure

haber, to have
 habitable, habitable
 habitante, *m., f.*, inhabitant
 hablado, spoken
 hablar, to speak
 hace, since, ago
 hacer, to do, to make
 hacer á la vela, to set sail
 hacha, *f.*, hatchet
 hácia, towards
 hacienda, *f.*, farm
 hallar, to find
 hambre, *f.*, hunger
 harto, enough
 hasta, until, even
 hay, there are, there is
 hazaña, *f.*, exploit
 hebreo, Hebrew
 hecho, made
 helar, to freeze
 heno, *m.*, hay
 heredar, to inherit
 herir, to wound
 hermana, *f.*, sister
 hermano, *m.*, brother
 hermoso, beautiful
 hermosura, *f.*, beauty
 hielo, *m.*, ice
 hiena, *f.*, hyena
 hierro, *m.*, iron
 hijo, son
 hipotenusa, *f.*, hypotenuse
 historia, *f.*, history
 holgazan (-a), indolent
 hombre, *m.*, man
 hombron, *m.*, big man
 homenaje, *m.*, homage
 honesto, modest
 honrar, to honor

hora, <i>f.</i> , hour	indultado, freed
hornillo, <i>m.</i> , stove (kitchen)	industrioso, industrious
horroroso, frightful	inevitable, inevitable
horrible, horrible	infancia, <i>f.</i> , childhood
hospital, <i>m.</i> , hospital	infelicitísimo, very unhappy
hostilidad, <i>f.</i> , hostility	infeliz, unhappy
hoy, to-day	influjo, <i>m.</i> , influence
huérfano, <i>m.</i> , orphan	informar, to inform
huerto, <i>m.</i> , garden	ingenio, <i>m.</i> , mind
huevo, <i>m.</i> , egg	inglés, English
huir, to escape, fly	inglés, <i>m.</i> , Englishman, Eng- lish language
humilde, humble	ingratitude, <i>f.</i> , ingratitude
huracan, <i>m.</i> , hurricane	inmediatamente, immediately
idea, <i>f.</i> , idea	inmortal, immortal
idioma, <i>m.</i> , language	inocencia, <i>f.</i> , innocence
ido (-s), departed, gone	insensato, <i>m.</i> , stupid (one)
iglesia, <i>f.</i> , church	instancia, <i>m.</i> , solicitation
ignorancia, <i>f.</i> , ignorance	instante, <i>m.</i> , instant
ignorante, <i>m.</i> , ignorant person	instante (-al), immediately
ignorar, to be ignorant of	instruir, to instruct
igual, equal	instrumento, <i>m.</i> , instrument
igualar, to equal	ínsula, <i>f.</i> , island
igualdad, <i>f.</i> , equality	intencion, intention
ilustracion, <i>f.</i> , enlightenment	intentar, to attempt
imágen, <i>f.</i> , figure (of speech)	interés, <i>m.</i> , interest
imitar, to imitate	interesante, interesting
impedir, to prevent	interrumpir, to interrupt
importa, imports	invieron, <i>m.</i> , winter
importe, <i>m.</i> , amount	ir, to go
imposible, impossible	irracional, irrational
impresion, <i>f.</i> , impression	italiano, Italian
improbable, improbable	
incendiar, to set on fire	jabalí, <i>m.</i> , wild boar
incesantemente, incessantly	jamás, never, ever
indicio, <i>m.</i> , indication	joven, <i>m.</i> , youth
indispuesto, indisposed	juego, <i>m.</i> , game
individuo, individual, person	juez, <i>m.</i> , judge
inducir, to lead (induce)	jugar, to play

- julio, *m.*, July
 junio, *m.*, June
 junto, near, united (joined)
 juramento, *m.*, oath
 jurar, to swear
 justicia, *f.*, justice
 juventud, *f.*, youth

 la, the
 la, her
 laborioso, painstaking
 labradora, *f.*, working woman
 lacayo, *m.*, servant
 ladrar, to bark
 ladrón, *m.*, robber
 lágrima, *f.*, tear
 lamento, *m.*, lamentation
 lápiz, *m.*, pencil (lead)
 largo (-a), large, long
 larguísimo, very large
 lástima, *f.*, pity
 lastimar, to grieve
 latino, Latin
 lavarse, to wash
 le, him (to him, her, it)
 leal, loyal
 lección, *f.*, lesson
 lecho, *m.*, bed
 leer, to read
 legua, *f.*, league
 legumbre, *f.*, vegetable
 leído, read
 lejos, far
 lengua, *f.*, language, tongue
 lenguaje, *m.*, language
 letra, *f.*, letter
 letras, *f.*, learning
 levantar, to raise
 levantarse, to get up

 levita, *f.*, frock-coat
 ley, *f.*, law
 leyendo, reading
 libertad, *f.*, liberty
 libra, *f.*, pound
 librería, *f.*, book-store
 libro, *m.*, book
 licencia, *f.*, license
 limpiar, to clean
 limpio, clean
 lista, *f.*, list (bill of fare)
 literario (-a), literary
 llamar, to call
 llave, *f.*, key
 llegado, arrived
 llegar, to arrive
 llenar, to fill
 lleno, full
 llevar, to raise, to take (along)
 llorar, to weep, shed tears
 llover, to rain
 lo, the
 lo, it
 lobo, *m.*, wolf
 loco, foolish, simple
 locura, *f.*, folly
 locución, *f.*, expression [upon
 lograr, to gain, succeed, hit
 lo que, what
 luego, soon, presently, imme-
 luego que, as soon as [diately
 lugar, *m.*, village, place
 lúgubre, gloomy
 luna, *f.*, moon
 lunes, *m.*, Monday
 luz, *f.*, light

 madera, *f.*, wood
 madre, *f.*, mother

maduramente, maturely	mayo, <i>m.</i> , May
maduro (-a), ripe	mayor, larger
maestro, <i>m.</i> , master, teacher	mayores, <i>m.</i> , forefathers
magistratura, <i>f.</i> , magistracy	me, me
magnífico, magnificent	mecer, to agitate
mal, <i>m.</i> , ill	á mediados, about the midst of
maldecir, to curse	mediano, mediocre
malecon, <i>m.</i> , dike	mediante, by means of
malicia, <i>f.</i> , malice	méico, <i>m.</i> , doctor
malo, bad	medio, <i>m.</i> , means
mamá, <i>f.</i> , mamma	medio, half
mañana, <i>f.</i> , morning	mejor, better
mandar, to command, to order,	memorias, <i>f.</i> , regards
manera, <i>f.</i> , manner [to send	memorial, <i>m.</i> , memorandum-
mando, <i>m.</i> , power	book, brief
manifestado, shown [show	menester, necessary
manifestar, to manifest, to	mengano, such a
manjar, <i>m.</i> , dish (food)	menor, smaller
mano, <i>f.</i> , hand	ménos, less (except)
mantel, <i>m.</i> , tablecloth	mensaje, <i>m.</i> , message
mantener, to keep	mensajero, <i>m.</i> , messenger
manzana, <i>f.</i> , apple	mentir, to lie
mar, <i>f.</i> , sea	mentira, <i>f.</i> , lie
maravilla, <i>f.</i> , wonder	mercader, <i>m.</i> , merchant
maravillar, to admire	mercadera, <i>f.</i> , merchant's wife
maravillarse, to wonder	mercadería, <i>f.</i> , goods
marcharse, to go off	á merced, gratis
marinero, <i>m.</i> , sailor	merecer, to merit
mariposa, <i>f.</i> , butterfly	merendar, to lunch
marroquí, <i>m.</i> , morocco leather	mérito, <i>m.</i> , merit
mártes, <i>m.</i> , Tuesday	mes, <i>m.</i> , month
martillo, <i>m.</i> , hammer	mesa, <i>f.</i> , table
mártir, <i>m.</i> , <i>f.</i> , martyr	metal, <i>m.</i> , metal
marzo, <i>m.</i> , March	meter, to put
(lo) más, most	mi, my
más-que (de), more than	mí, me
más vale, it is better	miedo, <i>m.</i> , fear
masa, <i>f.</i> , mass, rank	miente (-s), <i>f.</i> , thoughts
matar, to kill	miéntas más, the more
material, <i>m.</i> , material	miéntas que, whilst

- mil, thousand
 milagro, *m.*, miracle
 millon, *m.*, million
 mina, *f.*, mine
 ministro, *m.*, minister
 minuto, *m.*, minute
 mio, mine
 mirada, *f.*, glance
 mirar, to see
 misantropía, *f.*, misanthropy
 miserable, miserable
 misericordia, *f.*, mercy
 mismo, self (emphatic), same
 mitad, *f.*, half
 mocedad, *f.*, youth
 modales, *m.* (pl.), manners
 moderacion, *f.*, moderation
 modestia, *f.*, modesty
 modificarse, to be modified
 modo, *m.*, mode, manner
 monje, *m.*, monk
 monte, *m.*, mountain
 morar, to dwell
 morder, to bite
 moreno, chestnut
 morir, to die
 moro, *m.*, Moor
 mortal, mortal
 mostrar, to show
 motivo, *m.*, reason
 mover, to move
 movimiento, *m.*, movement
 muchacha, *f.*, girl
 muchacho, *m.*, boy
 mucho, much, many
 mudar, to change
 mueble, *m.*, furniture
 muerte, *f.*, death
 muerto, dead
 muestra, *f.*, sign
 mujer, *f.*, woman, wife
 mundo, *m.*, world
 murmurar, to murmur
 muro, *m.*, wall
 museo, *m.*, museum
 músico, *m.*, musician
 muy, very [iard
 muy español, a thorough Span-
 nacer, *v.*, to be born
 nacer, *m.*, appearance
 nació, was born
 nacion, *f.*, nation
 nada, not anything, nothing
 nadar, to swim
 nadie, nobody, no one
 naipe, *m.*, card
 naranja, *f.*, orange
 nariz, *f.*, nose
 naturaleza, *f.*, nature
 naufragar, to shipwreck
 nave, *f.*, ship
 navegar, to navigate
 necesáριο, necessary
 necesidad, *f.*, necessity
 necesitar, to need
 negar, to deny
 negocio, *m.*, affair, business
 negro, black
 nervioso, nervous
 nevar, to snow
 ni, nor
 nicho, *m.*, niche
 nieve, *f.*, snow
 niñería, *f.*, puerility
 ninguno (-a), no one, nobody
 ni...ni, neither...nor
 niño, *m.*, child

no, no	ojalá, would that!
noche, <i>f.</i> , night	ojo, <i>m.</i> , eye
nombre, <i>m.</i> , name	ola, <i>f.</i> , wave
no obstante, nevertheless, how-	oler, to smell, to scent
norte, <i>m.</i> , north	olvidar, to forget
nos, we, us	once, eleven
nosotros, we, us	ópera, <i>f.</i> , opera
notar, to notice	opinion, <i>f.</i> , opinion, renown
noticia, <i>f.</i> , news	oportuno, opportune, suitable
novedad, <i>f.</i> , news	óptimo, best
nube, <i>f.</i> , cloud	orador, <i>m.</i> , orator
nublado, cloudy	órden, <i>m.</i> , <i>f.</i> , order
nuestro (-a), our	ordenar, to order
nueve, nine	órgano, <i>m.</i> , organ (tool)
nuevo, new	oriente, <i>m.</i> , east
número, <i>m.</i> , number	orno, <i>m.</i> , oven
nunca, never	oro, <i>m.</i> , gold
	os, you
ó, or	osar, to dare
obedecer, to obey	oscuro, dark
obediente, obedient	otoño, <i>m.</i> , fall
obligar, oblige	otro (-a), other, another
obra, <i>f.</i> , work	(en) otra parte, elsewhere
obrar, to act	oveja, <i>f.</i> , sheep (ewe)
obtener, to obtain	
ocasion, <i>f.</i> , occasion	pacar, to pasture
océano, <i>m.</i> , ocean	paciencia, <i>f.</i> , patience
ochenta, eighty	padre, <i>m.</i> , father
ocho, eight	padres, <i>m.</i> , parents
ochocientos, eight hundred	pagar, to pay
ociosidad, <i>f.</i> , idleness	página, <i>f.</i> , page
ocupar, to busy	pais, <i>m.</i> , country
odiar, to hate	paja, <i>f.</i> , straw
ofender, to offend	pájaro, <i>m.</i> , bird
oficial, <i>m.</i> , officer	paje, <i>m.</i> , page
oficio, <i>m.</i> , office (employment)	palabra, <i>f.</i> , word
ofrecer, to offer	palacio, <i>m.</i> , palace
oido, <i>m.</i> , ear	palo, <i>m.</i> , blow (with stick)
oir, to hear	pan, <i>m.</i> , bread

- paño, *m.*, cloth
 pantaloon, *m.*, pantaloon
 papá, *m.*, papa
 papel, *m.*, paper
 par, *m.*, pair
 para, for (in order to)
 para que, in order that
 parecer, *m.*, opinion
 parecer, to seem
 pariente, *m.*, relative
 parque, *m.*, park
 parte, *f.*, part
 partida, *f.*, party
 partido, *m.*, resolution
 partir, to depart
 pasado, passed
 pasar, to pass
 pasearse, to walk (for pleasure)
 pasión, *f.*, passion
 paterno, paternal
 patria, *f.*, native land
 paz, *f.*, peace
 pecado, *m.*, sin
 pedir, to ask
 pelear, to fight
 peligro, *m.*, peril
 pelota, *f.*, ball (game)
 pena, *f.*, pain, punishment
 península, *f.*, peninsula
 pensamiento, *m.*, thought
 pensar, to think
 pensativo, thoughtful
 peor, worse
 pequeño, little
 percibir, to perceive, see
 perder, to lose
 perdido, lost
 perfecto, perfect
 perfidia, *f.*, perfidy
 periódico, *m.*, newspaper
 perjuicio, *m.*, prejudice
 permanecer, to persist, remain
 permitir, to permit
 pero, but
 perorar, to harangue
 perrillo, *m.*, little dog
 perro, *m.*, dog
 perseguir, to pursue
 persona, *f.*, person
 personaje, *m.*, personage
 pesante, heavy
 pesar (-se), to weigh, distress
 pescar, to fish
 peseta, *f.*, peseta, franc (20 cts.)
 peso, *m.*, dollar
 piano, *m.*, piano
 pícaro, *m.*, rogue
 pié, *m.*, foot
 pieza, *f.*, piece (play)
 piloto, *m.*, pilot
 piña, *f.*, cone
 pino, *m.*, pine
 pintado, described
 pintarse, to paint
 pintor, *m.*, painter
 pistola, *f.*, pistol
 placer, to please
 plato, *m.*, dish
 plaza, *f.*, place, market, square
 pleito, *m.*, dispute, lawsuit
 pluma, *f.*, pen
 plural, plural
 pobre, poor (not rich, worthless)
 pobreza, *f.*, poverty
 poco, little, few
 poder, to be able
 poderoso, powerful
 podido, been able

podrir, to rot	prestar, to lend
poesía, <i>f.</i> , poetry	pretender, to pretend
poeta, <i>m.</i> , poet	pretension, <i>f.</i> , pretension
política, <i>f.</i> , politics	prevenir, to inform
polvo, <i>m.</i> , dust	prieta, <i>f.</i> , haste
poner, to place, to put	primavera, <i>f.</i> , spring (time)
poner (-se), to put on	primer (-o), (-a), first
por, by, in	primito, <i>m.</i> , little cousin
por donde, through	primo, first
por en cima, on top, over	primo, <i>m.</i> , cousin
por más, however (great)	primoroso, fine
porque, because	príncipe, <i>m.</i> , prince
porqué, why	á principios, early
por. que, however	(de) prisa, fast
porvenir, <i>m.</i> , future	prision, <i>f.</i> , prison
posada, <i>f.</i> , inn	privar, to deprive
posesion, <i>f.</i> , possession	probar, to prove
posible, possible	proceder, to proceed
postre, <i>m.</i> , dessert	procurado, procured
postrero, later	procurar, to try
practicar, to practise	pródigo, prodigal
precaucion, <i>f.</i> , precaution	producir, to produce
precio, <i>m.</i> , price	profesion, <i>f.</i> , profession
precioso, precious	progreso, <i>m.</i> , progress
preciso, necessary	prohibir, to prohibit
preferir, to prefer	prójimo, <i>m.</i> , neighbor
pregunta, <i>f.</i> , question	promesa, <i>f.</i> , promise
preguntado, asked	prometer, to promise
preguntar, to ask	pronombre, <i>m.</i> , pronoun
premiar, to reward	pronto, soon
prendado, smitten	propio, own
preparar, to prepare	prorumpir, to break forth
prescribir, to prescribe	proseguir, to pursue
presencia, <i>f.</i> , presence	prosperidad, <i>f.</i> , prosperity
presentar, to present, to intro- duce	proteger, to protect
presente, present	protestante, Protestant
presente, <i>m.</i> , present (time)	provenir, to arise
presidente, <i>m.</i> , president	proximidad, <i>f.</i> , nearness
	próximo, next

- prudencia, f.*, prudence
prudente, prudent
prueba, f., trial, proof
público, public
podrir, to rot
pueblo, m., town, populace
puerta, f., door, gate
puerto, m., port
pues, since
puesto, m., place (position)
puesto que, since
puesto (caso) que, if
puñetazo, m., blow with fist
punto, m., point
pureza, f., purity

que, than, who, which
qué, what, how
quedarse, to remain
quejarse, to complain
querer, to want, will, wish,
 like, love
querido, loved, dear
qué tal, how
quien, who
quién, who?
quien...quien, one...another,
 some...other
quienquiera, whoever, whose-
 ever, whomever
quietud, f., quietness
quince, fifteen
quince dias, two weeks
quinto (-a), fifth
quitarse, to take off, away
quizá, perhaps

rabia, f., anger
racional, rational

radical, radical
rato, m., time (short)
rayo, m., flash (of lightning)
razon, f. (reason), right ac-
 real, royal (state) [count
real, m., Spanish coin (5 cts.)
rebaño, m., flock
rebuznar, to bray
recibido, received
recibir, to receive
recompensa, f., recompense
reconocer, to recognize
reconocimiento, m., gratitude
recomendar, to recommend
recorrer, to travel about
rectitud, f., rectitude
red, f., net
rededor, m., envious
al rededor, about
redondo, round
referir, to report, mention
reflexion, f., reflection
reflexionar, to reflect
reformador, m., reformer
refrenar, to restrain
regalar, to present
regaña, m., scolding
reina, f., queen
reinado, m., reign
reino, m., kingdom
reir, to laugh
reirse, to laugh (with derision)
relacion, f., narration
relampaguear, to lighten
reliquia, f., relic
reloj, m., watch
relucir, to glitter
remediar, to remedy
remedio, m., resource

remendar, to mend	robar, to rob
remoto, remote	rodilla, <i>f.</i> , knee
rendir, to render	romance, <i>m.</i> , romance
reñir, to scold	romper, to break
renta, <i>f.</i> , income	rondar, to go round
reo, <i>m.</i> , criminal	ropa, <i>f.</i> , clothes
reparable, worthy of attention	rostro, <i>m.</i> , face
repetir, to repeat	roto, defeated
representar, to represent	rubor, <i>m.</i> , blush
reprimir, to repress	ruego, <i>m.</i> , request
reprobar, to reprove	ruido, <i>m.</i> , noise
requisito, <i>m.</i> , requisite	ruso, Russian
resarcir, to compensate	
resolverse, to resolve, decide	sábana, <i>f.</i> , sheet
respetar, to respect	saber, to know
respeto, <i>m.</i> , respect	sabiduría, <i>f.</i> , knowledge, wis-
respirar, to breathe	sabio, wise [dom
responder, to respond	sacar, to pull out
respuesta, <i>f.</i> , answer, reply	saciar, to satisfy
restablecer, to re-establish	sacrificar, to sacrifice
restante, <i>m.</i> , rest	sacrificio, <i>m.</i> , sacrifice
retirar, to withdraw	sala, <i>f.</i> , hall
retirar (-se), to retire	salario, <i>m.</i> , salary
retrato, <i>m.</i> , portrait	salida, <i>f.</i> , exit
revelar, to reveal	salir, to go out
reverencia, <i>f.</i> , veneration	salud, <i>f.</i> , health
reves, <i>m.</i> , back, back part	saludable, salutary
al revés, on the contrary	saludar, to greet
revolucion, <i>f.</i> , revolution	santa, <i>f.</i> , saint
rey, <i>m.</i> , king	santo, <i>m.</i> , saint
ribera, <i>f.</i> , shore	san, <i>m.</i> , saint
ricazo, very rich	sastre, <i>m.</i> , tailor
rico, <i>m.</i> , rich (man)	satisfacción, <i>f.</i> , satisfaction
ridículo, ridiculous	satisfacer, to satisfy
rigor, <i>m.</i> , rigor	satisfecho, satisfied
rio, <i>m.</i> , river	sauce, <i>m.</i> , willow
riqueza, <i>f.</i> , wealth	se, self
riquísimo, very rich	seco, dry, meagre
risa, <i>f.</i> , laughter	secreto, <i>m.</i> , secret

- secuaz, m.*, follower
sed, f., thirst
seguir, to follow, continue
segundo, m., second
seguro, surely, safe
seis, six
sello, m., seal
selva, f., forest
semana, f., week
semejante, similar
semejar, to resemble
seña, f., sign
señal, f., sign
senda, f., path
señor, m., gentleman
señora, f., lady, mistress
señorita, f., a little or young lady
señorito, m., a little or young man
sentado, seated [man
sentarse, to sit down
sentenciar, to sentence
sentido, m., sense
sentirse, to feel, perceive
separar, to separate
sepulcro, m., sepulchre
ser, to be
servicio, m., service
servir, to serve
sesenta, sixty
setentrionale, north
setiembre, m., september
sexto, sixth
si, if
sí, self, yes
siempre, always
siete, seven
siglo, m., age, century
siguiente, following
silencio, m., silence
silla, f., chair
simple, simple
sin, without
sin embargo, notwithstanding
sino, except, but
soberbio, proud
sobre, besides
sobrina, f., niece
sobrino, m., nephew
social, social
sociedad, f., society
socorro, m., help
sofá, m., sofa
sol, m., sun
solamente, only
soldado, m., soldier
soledad, f., loneliness
soler, to be accustomed
solícito, solicitous
solo, alone
sólo, only
sombrero, m., hat
soñar, to dream of
sopa, f., soup
soplar, to blow
sorprender, to surprise
sosegado, quiet
su, his, her, its, your, their
suavidad, f., gentleness
súbdito, m., subject
subir, to ascend, mount
suced, to happen
sucedido, happened
sucesivamente, }
poco á poco, } little by little
suceso, m., event, success
sud, m., south
suelo, m., ground

sueño, <i>m.</i> , sleep	terminar, to terminate
suerte, <i>f.</i> , lot, sort	término, <i>m.</i> , limit
sufrir, to suffer	tesoro, <i>m.</i> , treasure
suma, <i>f.</i> , sum, amount	testamento, testament
superar, to surpass	testimonio, testimony
súplica, <i>f.</i> , petition	tiempo, <i>m.</i> , time
suplicar, to supplicate	tierra, <i>f.</i> , earth, land
supuesto, granted	tildar, to censure <i>tio, m, uncle</i>
sustento, <i>m.</i> , sustenance	tiro, <i>m.</i> , shot
suyo, his, her, its, your, their, yours, theirs	tocar, to touch, to play
	todavía, yet
tal, such (such a)	todo, whole, all, every
talento, <i>m.</i> , talent	tomar, to take
tal vez, often (perhaps)	tono, <i>m.</i> , tone
tambien, also	traba, <i>f.</i> , trammel
tambien...como, as well...as	trabajar, to work
tan, so, as	trabajo, <i>m.</i> , work, labor
tan (-to) ..como, as...as	traducir, translate
tanta más...que, the more...as	traer, to bring, to wear
tanto, so much	traido, brought
tardar, to tarry	traidor (-a), treacherous
tarde, <i>f.</i> , afternoon (evening)	traje, <i>m.</i> , dress (suit)
tarde, late	trampa, <i>f.</i> , trap, fraud
tarea, <i>f.</i> , task	tranquilidad, <i>f.</i> , tranquillity
té, <i>m.</i> , tea	tras, behind
teatro, <i>m.</i> , theatre	traspasado, afflicted
tema, <i>m.</i> , theme	tratado, <i>m.</i> , treatise
temblar, to tremble	tratar, to try, to make a treaty
temer, to fear	treinta, thirty
temeroso, afraid	trémulo, tremulous
tempestad, <i>f.</i> , storm	tren, <i>m.</i> , train
templo, <i>m.</i> , temple	tres, three
temporal, <i>m.</i> , storm	trescientos, three hundred
temprano, early	tribu, <i>m.</i> , tribe
tenderse, to stretch (one's self)	trigo, <i>m.</i> , wheat
tener, to hold, have	tristeza, <i>f.</i> , grief, sadness
teólogo, <i>m.</i> , theologian	trocar, to exchange
tercero, third	tronar, to thunder
	tropa, <i>f.</i> , troop, body of soldiers

- tu, thy
 tú, thou
 tumba, *f.*, tomb
 turbar to confuse
 tuyo, thy (thine)
- un, *m.*, a or an
 una, *f.*, a or an
 una docena, a dozen
 una vez, once
 unido (-a), united
 uno, one
 unos, one's
 usar, to use
 uso, *m.*, use
 usted (V.), you
 útil, useful
 utilidad, *f.*, profit
- vaca, *f.*, cow
 vale, farewell
 valer, to be worth
 valeroso, courageous
 valiente, valiant
 valle, *m.*, valley
 valluar, appreciate
 valor, *m.*, courage
 vano, vain
 vapor, *m.*, steam, steamboat
 vapuleo, *m.*, whipping
 variar, to vary
 varios (-as), several, various
 vecino, *m.*, neighbor, inhabitant
 vehementemente, with force
 veinte, twenty
 vela, *f.*, sail
 velar, to watch
- vencedor, *m.*, conqueror
 vencer, to conquer
 vender, to sell
 venganza, *f.*, vengeance
 vengar, to avenge
 venido, to come
 venir, to come
 venta, *f.*, sale
 ventaja, *f.*, advantage
 ventana, *f.*, window
 ver, to see
 verano, *m.*, summer
 de véras, really
 verdad, *f.*, truth
 verdaderamente, really
 verdadero, true
 vergüenza, *f.*, shame
 vero, true
 vestido, *m.*, dress, garment
 vestido, dressed
 vestir, to dress
 vez, *f.*, time
 una vez, once
 viajar, to travel
 viaje, *m.*, trip, voyage
 vicio, *m.*, vice
 victoria *f.*, victory
 vida, *f.*, life
 viento, *m.*, wind
 las de Villadiego, French leave
 vino, *m.*, wine
 violin, *m.*, violin
 virtud, *f.*, virtue
 virtuoso, virtuous
 vista, *f.*, prospect, eye
 visitar, to visit
 visto (ver), seen
 víveres, *m.*, victuals

vivir, to live
vivo, vivo, living
vivo, lively
volar, to fly
volúmen, *m.*, volume
voluntad, *f.*, will
volver, to return
(voy[-ir], I go)
vos (you), ye
vosotros, you
voz, *f.*, voice
vuestro, your

vulgarmente, commonly

y, and

ya, already, yet, now

yacer, to lie (down)

yerba, *f.*, grass

verno, *m.*, son-in-law

yo, I

zapato, *m.*, shoe

zutano, such a

VOCABULARY OF SPANISH PROPER NAMES,
AS USED IN PRECEDING PAGES.

África , Africa	España , <i>f.</i> , Spain [States
Alejandro , Alexander	Estados Unidos (los) , United
aleman , <i>m.</i> , German	Europa , <i>f.</i> , Europe
Alemania , <i>f.</i> , Germany	
Alpes (los) , Alps	Felipe , Philip
América , <i>f.</i> , America	Florida , <i>f.</i> , Florida
Árabe , <i>m.</i> , Arab	Francia , <i>f.</i> , France
Atesidora , <i>proper name</i>	Frederico , Frederic
Barcelona , Barcelone	Granada , <i>f.</i> , Granada
Bona , Bonn	
Becquer , Becquer	Habana , <i>f.</i> , Havana
Berna , Bern	Victor Hugo , Victor Hugo
Brasil , <i>m.</i> , Brazil	hugonote , Huguenot
Bretaña , <i>f.</i> , Brittany	
	Inglaterra , <i>f.</i> , England
Cairo , <i>m.</i> , Cairo	
Canadá , <i>m.</i> , Canada	Juan , John
Carlos , Charles	
Cervantes , Cervantes	Luis , Louis
Castilla , <i>f.</i> , Castile	Londres , London
China , <i>f.</i> , China	
chino , Chinese	Madrid , Madrid
Ciceron , Cicero	Malaga , Malaga
Colon , Columbus	María , Mary
Copérnico , Copernicus	Mariquilla , little Mary
Cortes , Cortes	Mateo , <i>m.</i> , Matthew
Dulcinea , Dulcinea	Nueva York , New York

Pablo, Paul

Pedro, Peter

Pepita, Josephine

Portugal, *m.*, Portugal

Prusia, *f.*, Prussia

Rin, *m.*, Rhine

Ródano, *m.*, the Rhone

Romano, *m.*, Roman

Salvador, Saviour, Salvador

Sena, *f.*, the Seine

Sicilia, *f.*, Sicily

Sierra, *f.*, Sierra

Suiza, *f.*, Switzerland

Tasso, *m.*, Tasso

Teresa, Theresa

Toledo, Toledo

Viena, Vienna

Villadiego, Villadiego

Wostenholm, Wostenholm

ENGLISH-SPANISH VOCABULARY.

Abbreviations : *f.*, feminine noun ; *m.*, masculine noun ; *v.*, verb.

a or an, un (-o), (-a)	ago, hace
abandon, <i>v.</i> , abandonar, de- jar, entregar	agree, <i>v.</i> , avenirse
abolish, <i>v.</i> , abolir	agreeable, agradable
about, cerca de, acerca de	aid, ayuda, <i>f.</i>
above, sobre	aid, <i>v.</i> , ayudar
accept, <i>v.</i> , aceptar	alas ! ay dolor !
accompany, <i>v.</i> , acompañar	Alfred, Alfredo
according to, conforme	all, todo
account, cuenta, <i>f.</i> , razon, <i>f.</i>	all along, á todo lo largo
accuse, <i>v.</i> , acusar	almond, almendra, <i>f.</i>
ache, dolor, <i>m.</i>	almost, casi
ache, <i>v.</i> , doler	alone, solo
achieved, acabado	along, por
act, <i>v.</i> , obrar	allow, <i>v.</i> , permitir
action, accion, <i>f.</i>	already, ya
admire, <i>v.</i> , admirar	also, tambien
admit, <i>v.</i> , admitir	although, aunque
adorned, adornado	always, siempre
advanced, avanzado	amass, <i>v.</i> , amontonar
advantage, ventaja, <i>f.</i>	America, América
adventure, aventura, <i>f.</i>	American, americano
○ advice, cansejo, <i>m.</i>	among, entre
advise, <i>v.</i> , aconsejar	ancient, antiguo
affair, negocio, <i>m.</i>	and, y, é
afraid (fear), miedo, <i>m.</i>	Andrew, Andrés
after, despues (de)	animal, animal, <i>m.</i>
afternoon, tarde, <i>f.</i>	announce, <i>v.</i> , anunciar
against, contra	another, otro
age, edad, <i>f.</i>	answer, <i>v.</i> , responder
agitate, <i>v.</i> , agitar	answer, respuesta, <i>f.</i>
	any, algun

- anything, algo
 any (whatever), cualquiera
 appear, *v.*, parecer
 apple, manzana, *f.*
 arise, *v.*, provenir
 arm (weapon), arma, *f.*
 arm (one's self), *v.*, armarse
 army, ejército, *m.*
 arrange, *v.*, arreglar
 arrive, *v.*, llegar
 arrived, llegado
 arts, artes, *f.*
 as . . . as, }
 as much as, } tanto . . . como
 as long as, mientras que
 ashamed, vergüenza, *f.*
 ask, *v.*, pedir, preguntar
 ass, donkey, asno, *m.*
 assault, asalto, *m.*
 assault, *v.*, asaltar
 assure, *v.*, asegurar
 astonished, admirado
 at, á
 at all, ya
 attempt, intentar
 Athenæum, Ateneo
 attention, atencion, *f.*
 attentive, atento
 attractive, atractivo
 augment, *v.*, aumentar
 author, autor, *m.*
 avoid, *v.*, evitar
 await, *v.*, esperar
 awake, *v.*, despertar

 bad, malo
 badly, mal
 ball (shot), bala, *f.*
 banish, *v.*, desterrar

 bank, banco, *m.*
 banker, banquero, *m.*
 barbarous, bárbaro
 Barcelona, Barcelona
 bathe (one's self), *v.*, bañarse
 battle, batalla, *f.*
 be, *v.*, ser, estar
 be able, *v.*, poder
 beautiful, hermoso
 beauty, hermosura, *f.*
 be born, *v.*, nacer
 because, porque
 bed, cama, *f.*, lecho, *m.*
 before, ántes, delante (de),
 ántes de (*or* que)
 beg, suplicar
 begin, *v.*, empezar, echarse
 behind, tras
 be ignorant of, *v.*, ignorar
 being, estando
 belfry, campanario, *m.*
 believe, *v.*, creer
 benefit, beneficio, *m.*
 Berne, Berna
 besides, sobre
 betray, *v.*, vender
 (it is) better, más vale
 between, por entre, de
 bird, pájaro, *m.*, ave, *f.*
 black, negro
 blame, culpa, *f.*
 bless, *v.*, bendecir
 blind, *v.*, cegar
 blow, *v.*, soplar [*m.*]
 blow (with stick), bastonazo,
 blue, azul
 boar (wild), jabalí, *m.*
 Bonn. Bona
 book, libro, *m.*

- book-store, *librería, f.*
 Bordeaux, *Burdeos*
 Bossuet, *Bosuet*
 Boston, *Boston*
 both, *ambos (-as)*
 both . . . and, *tanto . . . como*
 Bothnia, *Bothnia*
 boy, *muchacho, m.*
 Brazil, *Brasil, m.*
 bray, *v., rebuznar*
 bread, *pan, m.*
 breakfast, *v., almorzar*
 breath, *aliento, m.*
 breeding, *crianza, f.*
 bridle, *v., enfrenar*
 brilliant, *brillante*
 bring, *v., traer*
 broad, *ancho*
 brother, *hermano, m.*
 built, *edificado*
 business, *negocio, m.*
 busy, *v., ocupar*
 but, *pero, sino*
 butterfly, *mariposa, f.*
 buy, *v., comprar*
 by, *por*
- call, *v., llamar*
 Canada, *Canadá, m.*
 candor, *candor, m.*
 capital, *capital, f.*
 captain, *capitan, m.*
 care, *cuidado, m.*
 carry, *v., llevar*
 Catholic, *católico*
 caught, *cogido*
 cause, *v., causar*
 certain, *cierto* [mente
 certainly, *por cierto, cierta-*
- Cervantes, Cervantes*
 chain, *cadena, f.*
 chair, *silla, f.*
 change, *v., convertir*
 charity, *caridad*
 chase, *v., cazar*
 child, *niño, m., niña, f.*
 children, *niños, hijos*
 childhood, *infancia, f.*
 Chinese, *chino*
 Christian, *cristiano*
 church, *iglesia, f.*
 circus, *circo, m.*
 city, *ciudad, f.*
 classic, *clásico, m.*
 clean, *limpio*
 clear, *claro*
 climate, *clima, m.*
 cloak, *capa, f.*
 close, *v., cerrar*
 cloth, *pañó, m.*
 clothes, *ropa, f.*
 cloud, *nube, f.*
 coach, *coche, m.*
 coat (frock), *levita, f.*
 cold, *frio*
 combat, *v., combatir*
 come, *v., venir*
 come, *llegado* (participle)
 comedy, *comedia, f.*
 commerce, *comercio, m.*
 companion, *compañero, m.*
 compare, *v., comparar*
 compete, *v., competir*
 concerning, *acerca de*
 concert, *concierto, m.*
 condition, { *condicion, f.*
 { *situation, f.*
 conduct, *conducta, f.*

- dispute, *disputa, f.*
 distrust, *v., desconfiar*
 divided, *dividido*
 do, *v., hacer*
 doctor, *médico, m.*
 doctrine, *doctrina, f.*
 document, *papel, m.*
 dog, *perro, m.*
 dollar, *peso, m.*
 door, *puerta, f.*
 double, *doble*
 doubt, *duda, f.*
 doubt, *v., dudar*
 dozen, *docena, f.*
 dramatic, *dramático*
 dress, *traje, m., vestido, m.*
 dressed, *vestido*
 drink, *v., beber*
 duchess, *duquesa, f.*
 durable, *durable*
 dust, *polvo, m.*
 duty, *deber, m.*
 dwell, *v., morar*

 early, *temprano*
 earn, *v., ganar*
 earth, *tierra, f.*
 east, *oriente m.*
 easy, *fácil*
 eat, *v., comer*
 education, *educacion, f.*
 Edward, *Eduardo*
 effect, *efecto, m.*
 effort, *esfuerzo, m.*
 egg, *huevo, m.*
 eight, *ocho*
 elect, *v., elegir*
 elephant, *elefante, m.*
 eleven, *once*

 eloquence, *elocuencia, f.*
 elsewhere, *(en) otra parte*
 emperor, *emperador, m.*
 employment, *empleo, m.*
 encounter, *v., encontrar*
 end, *fin, m.*
 enemy, *enemigo, m.*
 England, *Inglaterra*
 English, *inglés*
 Englishman, *inglés*
 enough, *bastante*
 enter, *v., entrar*
 equal, *igual*
 equal, *igualar*
 equality, *igualdad, f.*
 error, *error, m.*
 escape, *salida, f.*
 establish, *v., establecer*
 estate, *hacienda, f.*
 esteem, *estima, f., estimacion, f.*
 esteem, *v., estimar*
 esteemed, *estimado*
 Europe, *Europa, f.*
 even, *tambien, aun, hasta*
 evening, *tarde, f.*
 event, *suceso, m.*
 ever, *jamás, nunca*
 every, *cada*
 excellent, *excelente*
 except, *ménos, sino*
 excess, *exceso, m.*
 exchange, *cambio, m.*
 exclaim, *v., exclamar*
 excuse, *v., dispensar*
 exercise, *ejercicio, m.*
 exposition, *exposicion, f.*
 expression (word), *voz, f.*
 eye, *ojo, m.*

façade, fachada, *f.*
 face, rostro, *m.*
 facilitate, *v.*, facilitar
 (in) fact, (en) efecto, *m.*
 faith, fe, *f.*
 faithful, fiel
 fall, *v.*, caer
 fall, otoño, *m.*
 fame, fama, *f.*
 famine, carestía, *f.*
 farm, hacienda, *f.*
 fast (de), prisa, *f.*
 father, padre, *m.*
 fatigue, fatiga, *f.*
 favor, favor, *m.*
 favorable, favorable
 fear, miedo, *m.*
 fear, *v.*, temer
 feature, facción, *f.*
 February, febrero, *m.*
 feel, *v.*, sentirse
 feminine, femenino
 ferocious, feroz
 fever, calentura, *f.*
 field, campo, *m.*
 fifteen, quince
 fifth, quinto
 fifty, cincuenta
 find, hallar, encontrar
 fine, bello
 finger, dedo, *m.*
 finish, *v.*, acabar
 fire, fuego, *m.*
 first, primo, primero
 fish, *v.*, pescar
 five, cinco
 flag, bandera, *f.*
 flourishing, floreciente
 flower, flor, *f.*

flower-pot, florero, *m.*
 fly (to escape), *v.*, huir
 follow, *v.*, seguir
 foot, pié, *m.*
 for, para, por, á
 for, porque
 force, fuerza, *f.*
 (with) force, vehementemente
 forest, selva, *f.*
 forget, *v.*, olvidar
 formerly (before), ántes
 fortress, fortaleza, *f.*
 fortune, fortuna, *f.*
 forty, cuarenta
 founded, fundado
 four, cuatro
 frailty, fragilidad, *f.*
 France, Francia, *f.*
 franc, franco, *m.*
 frank, franco
 free, libre
 freeze, *v.*, helar
 French (man), frances
 friend, amigo, *m.*, amiga, *f.*
 frightful, horroroso
 frivolous, frívolo, baladí
 from, de
 fruit, fruta, *f.*, fruto, *m.*
 full, lleno
 fulfil, *v.*, complirse
 fun, burla, *f.*
 funds, caudales, *m.*
 future, porvenir, *m.*

 gain, *v.*, ganar
 Galatea, Galatea
 game, juego, *m.*
 garden, huerto, *m.*
 gate, puerta, *f.*

- general, **general**, *m.*
 generally, **generalmente**
 genius, **genio**, *m.*
 gentleman, **señor**, *m.*, **caballero**, *m.*
 gentleness, **suavidad**, *f.*
 German, **aleman**
 get, *v.*, **lograr**
 get drunk, *v.*, **emborracharse**
 get possession, *v.*, **apoderarse**
 get out, *v.*, **salir**
 get up, *v.*, **levantarse**
 girl, **muchacha**, *f.*
 give, *v.*, **dar**
 gloomy, **lúgubre**
 glory, **gloria**, *f.*
 glove, **guante**, *m.*
 go, *v.*, **ir**, **andar**
 goat, **cabra**, *f.*
 go away, *v.*, **irse**
 God grant, **Dios quiera**
 gold, **oro**, *m.*
 good, **bueno**
 good-day, **buenos días**
 goodness, **bondad**, *f.*
 goods, **mercadería**, *f.*
 go out, *v.*, **salir**
 go to bed, *v.*, **acostarse**
 government, **gobierno**, *m.*
 grandee, **grande**, *m.*
 grandmother, **abuela**, *f.*
 granted, **supuesto**
 greatest, **mayor**
 Greece, **Grecia**, *f.*
 Greek, **griego**
 habitable, **habitable**
 hair, **cabello**, *m.*
 half, **medio**
 hamlet, **aldea**, *f.*
 hand, **mano**, *f.*
 handed, **entregado**
 hand over, *v.*, **entregar**
 happen, *v.*, **pasar**, **suced**
 happy, **feliz**, **dichoso**
 harangue, *v.*, **perorar**
 harvest, **cosecha**, *f.*
 haste, **priesa**, *f.*
 hat, **sombrero**, *m.*
 hatchet, **hacha**, *f.*
 Havana, **Habana**, *f.*
 have, *v.*, **tener**, **haber**
 he, **él**
 head, **cabeza**, *f.*
 headache, **dolor** (*m.*) **de cabeza**
 health, **salud**, *f.*
 hear, *v.*, **oir**
 heart, **corazon**, *m.*
 heat, **calor**, *m.*
 heaven, **cielo**, *m.*
 heedlessness, **descuido**, *m.*
 help, **ayuda**, *f.*
 her, **la**, **ella**
 her, **su**, **suyo**
 here, **aquí**, **acá**
 Herrera, **Herrera**
 he who, **aquel que**
 hide, *v.*, **esconder**
 high, **alto**
 highest, **sumo**
 him, **le**
 his, **su**, **suyo**
 history, **historia**, *f.*
 hit upon, *v.*, **lograr**
 hold, *v.*, **tener**
 homage, **homenaje**, *m.*
 home (at), **en casa**
 hope, *v.*, **esperer**
 horse, **caballo**, *m.*
 hot, **cálido**

- hour, *hora, f.*
 house, *casa, f.*
 how, *como*
 how! *qué!*
 however, *por...que, con...que*
 how much, *cuánto*
 Huguenot, *hugonote*
 humble, *humilde*
 hunger, *hambre, f.*
 hunt, *v., cazar*
- I, *yo*
 idea, *idea, f.*
 idleness, *ociosidad, f.*
 idle, *holgazan*
 if, *si, cuando*
 ignorance, *ignorancia, f.*
 ill, *mal, adv., malo, adj.*
 ill-luck, *enhoramala, f.*
 image, *imagen, f.*
 immediately, *inmediatamente*
 immortal, *inmortal*
 in, *en, por*
 incessantly, *incesantemente*
 India, *Indias (las)*
 indication, *indicio, m.*
 inequality, *desigualdad, f.*
 inevitable, *inevitable*
 infirm, *enfermizo*
 influence, *influjo, m.*
 inform, *v., informarse, enterarse, avisar*
 innocence, *inocencia, f.*
 inspire, *v., inspirar*
 instead of, *en vez de*
 instruct, *v., instruir*
 instrument, *instrumento, m.*
 interest, *interés, m.*
 interrupt, *v., interrumpir*
- introduce, *v., presentar*
 inundation, *avenida, f.*
 invite, *v., convidar*
 iron, *hierro, m.*
 it, *ello, lo*
 its, *su, suyo*
- January, *enero, m.*
 Jerez, *Jerez*
 jest, *burla, f.*
 John, *Juan*
 little John, *Juanito*
 joined, *junto*
 judge, *juez, m.*
 July, *julio, m.*
 June, *junio, m.*
- keep, *v., mantener, tener*
 keep on, *irse*
 key, *llave, f.*
 kill, *v., matar*
 kind of weather, *tiempo, m.*
 kindness, *bondad, f.*
 king, *rey, m.*
 kingdom, *reino, m.*
 kitchen, *cocina, f.*
 knee, *rodilla, f.*
 on the knees, *de rodillas*
 knife, *cuchillo, m.*
 knight-errant, *caballero andante*
 knock, *v., tocar* [te, m.]
 know, *v., saber, conocer*
 knowledge, *conocimiento, m.*
 known, *conocido*
- labor, *trabajo, m.*
 lady, *señora f., dama, f.*
 lady (young), *señorita*
 language, *lengua, f.*

- large, **grande**
 last, *v.*, **durar**
 last night, **anoche**
 late, **tarde**
 Latin, **latino**
 laugh, *v.*, **reir**
 laughter, **risa, f.**
 law, **ley, f.**
 lawyer, **abogado, m.**
 lead, *v.*, **conducir**
 learn, *v.*, **aprender, saber**
 learning **letras, f.**
 learned, **docto, erudito, leido**
 French leave, **las de Villadiego**
 lend, *v.*, **prestar**
 less, **ménos**
 lesson, **lección, f.**
 let (allow), *v.*, **dejar**
 letter, **carta, f.**
 letter of exchange, **letra de cambio**
 liberty, **libertad, f.**
 lie, *v.*, **mentir**
 life, **vida, f.**
 like, *v.*, **querer**
 listen, *v.*, **escuchar**
 little, **pequeño, poco**
 little by little, **sucesivamente,**
 live, *v.*, **vivir** [**poco á poco**
 lock, *v.*, **cerrar**
 look, *v.*, **buscar, mirar**
 London, **Lóndres**
 long, **largo**
 lose, *v.*, **perder**
 loss, **daño, m.**
 lot, **suerte, f.**
 love, *v.*, **amar**
 love, **amor, m.**
 loyal, **leal**
- lunch, *v.*, **merendar**

 Madeira, **Madera**
 magnificent, **magnífico**
 maiden, **doncella, f.**
 make, *v.*, **hacer**
 make a treaty, *v.*, **tratar**
 make use of, **servirse de**
 Malaga, **Malaga**
 man, **hombre, m.**
 manner, **manera, f.**
 manners, **costumbres, f., moda-**
 many, **mucho** [**les, m.**
 march, *v.*, **marchar**
 March, **marzo, m.**
 marry, *v.*, **casarse**
 Mary, **María**
 master, **amo, m., señor, m.**
 Mataro, **Mataró**
 matter (what is the matter), **que**
 Matthew, **Mateo, m.** [**tiene V.?**
 maturely, **maturamente**
 May, **mayo, m.**
 me, **me, mí**
 meal (repast), **comida, f.**
 means, **medio, m.**
 by means of, **mediante**
 meat, **carne, f.**
 Mediterranean, **Mediterráneo, m.**
 meet, *v.*, **encontrar**
 mend, *v.*, **remendar**
 mentioned, **dicho**
 merchant, **mercader, m.**
 merit, *v.*, **merecer**
 messenger, **mensajero, m.**
 metal, **metal, m.**
 midday, **mediodía, m.**
 mind, **ingenio, m., ánimo, m.**
 mine, **mio,**

- minute, *minuto, m.*
 miserable, *miserable*
 misfortune, *desdicha, desgracia, m.*
 mistress, *señora, f.* [*f.*]
 moderation, *moderacion, f.*
 modesty, *modestia, f.*
 be modified, *v., modificarse*
 Monday, *lunes, m.*
 money, *dinero, m.*
 monk, *monje, m.*
 month, *mes, m.*
 the more, *miétras más*
 morning, *mañana, f.*
 mother, *madre, f.*
 mount, *v., subir*
 mountain, *monte, m.*
 mouth, *boca, f.*
 much, *mucho*
 music, *música, f.*
 musician, *músico, m.*
 must, *v., deber*
 my, *mi*
- name, *nombre, m.*
 name, *v., llamarse*
 native land, *patria, f.*
 nature, *naturaleza, f.*
 navigate, *v., navegar*
 near, *cerca (de), junto*
 necessary, *menester, necesario*
 need, *v., necesitar*
 (has need), *ha menester*
 negro, *negro, m.*
 neighbor, *vecino, m.*
 neither, *tampoco*
 neither...nor, *ni...ni*
 never, *jamás, nunca*
 new, *nuevo*
 news, *noticia, f., novedad, f.*
- newspaper, *periódico, m.*
 next, *que viene, próximo*
 niche, *niche, m.*
 niece, *sobrina, f.*
 night, *noche, f.*
 nine, *nueve*
 no, *no*
 nobody, *nadie*
 no one, *ninguno*
 nor, *ni*
 north, *norte, m.*
 not, *no*
 not yet, *no todavía*
 nose, *nariz, f.*
 nothing, *nada*
 notice, *v., notar*
 now, *ahora, ya*
 number, *número, m.*
- obey, *v., obedecer*
 oblige, *v., obligar*
 observe, *v., observar*
 obtain, *v., obtener, conseguir*
 ocean, *océano, m.*
 of, *de*
 offer, *v., ofrecer*
 officer, *oficial, m.*
 often, *á menudo, muchas veces*
 old, *viejo, antiguo*
 on, *en, sobre*
 on account of, *por*
 once, *una vez*
 one, *un (-o), (-a)*
 only, *sólo, sino*
 open, *v., abrir*
 opinion, *parecer, m.*
 opportune, *oportuno*
 or, *ó*
 orange, *naranja, f.*

orator, *orador, m.*
 order, *v., mandar*
 in order that, *para que*
 in order to, *para*
 ought, *v., deber*
 our, *nuestro*
 overcome, *v., superar*
 owner, *dueño, m.*

 page, *página, f.*
 pain, *dolor, m.*
 painter, *pintor, m.*
 pair, *par, m.*
^{k,}
^{que} paper, *papel, m.*
 part, *parte, f.*
 party, *partida, f.*
 pass, *v., pasar*
 pass (hand), *v., pasar, alargar*
 passion, *pasion, f.*
 Paul, *Pablo*
 pay, *v., pagar*
 pay attention to, *v., atender*
 peace, *paz, f.*
 pear, *pera, f.*
 pen, *pluma, f.*
 pencil (lead), *lápiz, m.*
 peninsula, *península, f.*
 people, *gente, f.*
 perfect, *perfecto*
 peril, *peligro, m.*
 permission, *licencia, f.*
 perplexity, *embarazo, m.*
 person, *persona, f.*
 peseta (20 cts.), *peseta, f.*
 philosopher, *filósofo, m.*
 physician, *médico, m.*
 piano, *piano, m.*
 picture, *cuadro, retrato, m.*
 pilot, *piloto, m.*

place, *v., poner* [*empleo, m.*
 place, *puesto, m., lugar, m.,*
 play, *v., tocar, representar*
 please, *v., gustar, alegrar,*
 pleasure, *gusto, m.* [*placer*
 plough, *arado, m.*
 pocket, *faltriquera, f.*
 poet, *poeta, m.*
 poor, *pobre*
 portrait, *retrato, m.*
 Portugal, *Portugal, m.*
 possible, *posible*
 post, *correo, m.*
 poverty, *pobreza, f.*
 power, *mano, f., mando, m.,*
 powerful, *poderoso* [*poder, m.*
 practice, *v., practicar*
 praise, *v., alabar*
 prefer, *v., preferir*
 prejudice, *perjuicio, m.*
 prepare, *v., preparar, aderezar*
 present, *presente*
 present (month), *corriente, m.*
 present, *v., presentar*
 pretension, *pretension, f.*
 pretty, *bonito*
 prevent, *v., impedir*
 priest, *cura, m.*
 prison, *prision, f.*
 prodigal, *pródigo*
 produce, *v., producir*
 profit, *utilidad, f.*
 promise, *promesa, f.*
 promise, *v., prometer*
 proof, *prueba, f.*
 prospect, *vista, f.*
 Protestant, *protestante*
 provided that, *con tal que*
 prudence, *prudencia, f.*

- prudent, *prudente*
 prudently, *prudentemente*
 public, *público*
 purity, *pureza, f.*
 purse, *bolsa, f.*
 put, *v., poner, meter*
 put in order, *v., arreglar*
 put on, *v., ponerse*
- quantity, *cantidad, f.*
 question, *cuestion, f.*
 quiet, *sosegado, sereno*
 Quintana, *Quintana*
- railway, *camino de hierro, m.*
 rain, *v., llover*
 rarely, *rara vez*
 read, *v., leer*
 reach, *v., echar mano á, llegar*
 really, *verdaderamente*
 reason, *motivo, m., razón, f.*
 receive, *v., recibir*
 received, *recibido*
 recounting, *cantando*
 rectitude, *rectitud, f.*
 regain, *v., alcanzar*
 rejoice, *v., alegrarse*
 regret, *v., sentir*
 relate, *v., contar, referir*
 relative, *pariente, m. and f.*
 relic, *reliquia, f.*
 remain, *v., quedarse*
 render, *v., rendir*
 repeat, *v., repetir*
 repent, *v., arrepentirse [m.]*
 repentance, *arrepentimiento,*
 reply, *respuesta, f.*
 represent, *v., representar*
 improve, *v., reprobar*
- reputation, *opinión, f.*
 require, *v., necesitar*
 resolution, *partido, m.*
 resource, *remedio, m.*
 respond, *v., responder*
 rest, *v., descansar*
 rest, *restante, m.*
 retire, *v., retirarse*
 return, *v., volverse*
 Rhine, *Rin, m.*
 Rhone, *Ródano, m.*
 rich (man), *rico, m.*
 ridicule, *v., burlarse [risa]*
 ridiculous, *ridículo, digno de*
 right, *derecho, m., razón, f.*
 rightly, *con razón*
 river, *rio, m.*
 road, *camino, m.*
 rob, *v., robar*
 robber, *ladron, m.*
 romance, *romance, m. ^{novela}*
 Rome, *Roma*
 room, *pieza, f., cuarto, m.*
- sacrifice, *sacrificio, m.*
 sadness, *tristeza, f.*
 safe, *seguro*
 sail, *v., navegar*
 sailor, *marinero, m.*
 saint, *santo (-a), m., f.*
 sale, *venta, f.*
 sally forth, *v., salir*
 salutary, *saludable*
 same, *mismo*
 satisfy, *v., satisfacer*
 Saviour, *Salvador, m.*
 say, *v., decir*
 scarcely, *apénas*
 science, *ciencia, f.*

- scold, *v.*, *reñir*
 scribe, *escribano, m.*
 sea, *mar, m.*
 season, *estacion, f.*
 seated, *sentado*
 second, *segundo, m.*
 Sedan, *Sedan*
 see, *v.*, *ver, mirar*
 seem, *v.*, *parecer*
 Seine, *Sena, f.*
 self, *se, sí, mismo*
 select, *v.*, *escoger*
 sell, *v.*, *vender*
 send, *v.*, *enviar*
 sense, *sentido, m.*
 sent, *entregado*
 separate, *v.*, *separarse*
 September, *setiembre, m.*
 sepulchre, *sepulcro, m.*
 servant, *lacayo, criado, m.*
 serve, *v.*, *servir*
 set sail. *hacer á la vela*
 seven, *siete*
 several, *varios (-as)*
 shame, *vergüenza, f.*
 she, *ella*
 shield-bearer, *escudero, m.*
 sheep, *carnero, m.*
 sheet, *sábana, f.*
 shelter, *v.*, *abrigar*
 shift for one's self, *bandearse*
 ship, *buque, m.*, *nave, f.*
 shoe, *zapato, m.*
 should (must), *v.*, *deber*
 show, *v.*, *manifestar*
 shut, *v.*, *cerrar* [*m.*]
 side (of right triangle), *cateto,*
 sign, *muestra, f.*
 silence, *silencio, m.*
 silver, *plata, f.*
 since, *pues. puesto que, desde,*
 despues de, despues, como
 single, *solo*
 sister, *hermana, f.*
 sit down, *v.*, *sentarse*
 situation, *colocacion, f.*, *em-*
 six, *seis* [*pleo, m.*]
 sixth, *sexto*
 slave, *esclavo, m.*
 sleep, *v.*, *dormir*
 sleepy (sleep), *sueño, m.*
 small, *pequeño*
 smell, *v.*, *oler*
 snow, *v.*, *nevar*
 so, *tan, si*
 social, *social*
 society, *sociedad, f.*
 softly, *bajo*
 soldier, *soldado, m.*
 some, *alguno*
 some one, *alguien, alguno*
 somewhere, *en cualquiera*
 son, *hijo, m.* [*parte*]
 soon, *luego*
 sooner, *ánten*
 soul, *alma, f.*
 sour, *agrio*
 south, *sud, m.*
 Spain, *España, f.*
 Spanish, *español*
 speak, *v.*, *hablar*
 speedy, *presto*
 spend, *v.*, *gastar, pasar*
 spirit, *espíritu, m.*
 spoken, *hablado*
 spring (time), *primavera, f.*
 square, *cuadrado, m.*
 squire, *esoudero, m.*

- star, *astro, m., estrella, f.*
 state, *estado, m.*
 The United States, *Los Estados*
 stature, *figura, f.* [Unidos
 steam (boat), *vapor, m.*
 still, *todavía*
 store, *almacen, m.*
 story (narration), *historía, f.*
 storm, *temporal, m.*
 storm, *v., asaltar*
 stove, *hornillo, m.*
 stranger, { *extranjero, m.*
 { *forastero, m.*
 street, *calle, f.*
 stretch, *v., tenderse*
 string, *cuerda, f.*
 strong, *fuerte*
 student, *estudiante, m.*
 study, *v., estudiar*
 stupid (one), *insensato*
 subject, *asunto, m.*
 such, *tal*
 such great, *tanto*
 suffer, *v., sufrir, permitir*
 suitable, *oportuno*
 sum (amount), *suma, f.*
 summer, *verano, m.*
 sun, *sol, m.*
 Sunday, *domingo, m.*
 supplicate, *v., suplicar*
 sure, *cierto, seguro (estoy cierto*
 surely, *seguro* [que)
 surgeon, *cirujano, m.*
 surpass, *v., superar*
 surprise, *admiración, f.*
 surprise, *v., sorprender*
 swear, *v., jurar*
 sweet, *dulce*
 swim, *v., nadar*
 sword, *espada, f.*
 table, *mesa, f.*
 tailor, *sastre, m.*
 take off *or* away, *quitar (-se)*
 take, *v., tomar, llevar, quitar*
 talent, *talento, m.*
 tall, *alto, grande*
 task, *tarea, f.*
 taste, *gusto, m.*
 tear, *lágrima, f.*
 tell, *v., decir*
 ten, *diez*
 than, *que, de*
 thanks, *gracias, f.*
 that, *que*
 that, *para que*
 that, *ese, aquel, aquello*
 that which, *aquello que*
 the, *el, la, lo*
 then, *entonces*
 their, *su, suyo*
 theme, *tema, m.*
 theologian, *teólogo, m.*
 there, *allá, allí*
 thing, *cosa, f.*
 think, *v., pensar, creer*
 third, *tercero*
 thirst, *sed, f.*
 this, *este, esto (esta, f.)*
 thou, *tú*
 thought, *pensamiento, m.*
 thousand, *mil*
 three, *tres*
 through which, *por donde*
 thus, *así*
 thy, *tu, tuyo*
 time, *tiempo, m., hora, f.*
 time (one), *vez, f.*

tire, cansar
 to, á
 to-day, hoy
 together, junto (-s)
 to-morrow, mañana, *f.*
 tone, tono, *m.*
 tongue, lengua, *f.*
 too much, demasiado
 toward, contra
 towards, hácia
 town, pueblo, *m.*
 tractable, dócil
 trammel, traba, *f.*
 translate, *v.*, traducir
 travel, *v.*, viajar
 treacherous, traidor
 treasure, tesoro, *m.*
 treat, *v.*, tratar
 tree, árbol, *m.*
 tremble, *v.*, temblar
 true, verdadero
 trunk, baul, *m.*, cofre, *m.*
 trust, *v.*, fiarse
 truth, verdad, *f.*
 try, *v.*, procurar
 Tuesday, mártes, *m.*
 twelve, doce
 two, dos
 two weeks, quince dias
 under, ^{uncle} bajo, *fio*
 understand, *v.*, entender
 undertaking, empresa, *f.*
 unfortunate, desgraciado
 unhappiness, infelicidad, *f.*
 unhappy, infeliz, desdichado
 United States, Estados Unidos
 until, hasta que
 upon, sobre

us, nos
 use, *v.*, usar
 useful, útil

Valdes, Valdés (author)
 Lope de Vega, Lope de Vega
 very, muy, mismo
 vice, vicio, *m.*
 victory, victoria, *f.*
 village, aldea, *f.*, lugar, *m.*
 violin, violin, *m.*
 virtue, virtud, *f.*
 visit, *v.*, visitar
 voice, voz, *f.*
 voyage, viaje, *m.*

wait, *v.*, esperar
 walk, *v.*, { caminar
 { pasear
 wall, muro, *m.*
 war, guerra, *f.*
 wash, *v.*, lavar
 watch, reloj, *m.*
 watch, *v.*, velar
 water, agua, *f.*
 way, camino, *m.*
 we, nosotros
 wealth, riqueza, *f.*
 wear, *v.*, traer
 weary, *v.*, cansar
 week, semana, *f.*
 weigh, *v.*, pesar
 well, bien
 what, lo que
 what(ever), lo que
 what?, qué?
 wheat, trigo, *m.*
 when, cuando
 where, donde, dónde?

which, <i>que, cual</i>	woods, <i>bosque, m.</i>
white, <i>blanco</i>	word, <i>palabra, f.</i>
who, <i>que</i>	work, <i>v., trabajar</i>
who, <i>cual, el cual, etc., cuál ?</i>	work, <i>trabajo, m., obra, f.</i>
who, <i>quien, quién ?</i>	worn out, <i>usado</i>
whole, <i>todo</i>	worthless, <i>pobre</i>
whose, <i>cuyo</i>	worthy of attention, <i>reparable</i>
(of) width, (de) <i>ancho</i>	wretched, <i>infeliz</i>
will, <i>voluntad, f.</i>	write, <i>v., escribir</i>
win, <i>v., granjear</i>	write out, <i>v., componer</i>
wind, <i>viento, m.</i>	written, <i>escrito</i>
window, <i>ventana, f.</i>	
wine, <i>vino, m.</i>	ye (you), <i>vos</i>
winter, <i>invierno, m.</i>	year, <i>año, m.</i>
wise, <i>sabio</i>	yes, <i>sí</i>
wish, <i>v., querer</i>	yesterday, <i>ayer</i>
with, <i>con</i>	yet, <i>todavía, ya, pero</i>
within, <i>dentro (de)</i>	you, <i>Usted, V., m., f., vosotros,</i>
with it, <i>consigo</i>	young, <i>jóven</i> [vos
without, <i>sin</i>	your, <i>su, suyo, vuestro</i>
woman, <i>mujer, f.</i>	youth, <i>mocedad, f.</i>
wonder, <i>admiracion, f.</i>	

GENERAL INDEX.

References are to sections except where page is specially indicated.

- a**, 1; pronounced, 5.
á before personal nouns, Les. II, page 29 (note 2); with infinitive, Les. XXX, 239 (*k*), 262.
accent (acute), 37(*a*); graphic, 37; tonic, 34.
acertar, etc., Les. XVIII, 176, 177.
acordar, 178, 179.
adjectives, Les. IV; comparison of, Les. V; pronominal, Les. XI, 117 (note 2), 255 (*d*), 274.
adquirir, 210.
adverbs, Les. XXXII; of affirmation and negation, 256; comparison of, 257; peculiarities of, 257; place of, 258.
afraid, 172.
age, 172.
alegrar (-se), 173, 174.
algo, 120, 121, 255 (*e*).
alguien, 120, 122.
alguno, 66, 120, 122.
al, 45.
alphabet, 1.
alto, 69.
amar, Les. VII, 94, Les. X, 119, Les. XI, 138; conjugated like hablar, Les. XII.
ambos, 120, 123.
andar, 180, 181.
antojar (-se), 184 (*b*).
aquel, 104, 105 (*a*), 111.
aquella, 105 (*a*).
aquello, 105 (*a*).
are (you are speaking, etc.), 49.
article, Les. I, 99 (note), 101, 109, 113, 114; with noun, Les. III; for possessive, 94, 101(*b*).
ashamed, 172.
asir, 211.
atender, etc., Les. XIX, 185.
augmentatives, 62.
auxiliary verbs, 143, 160, 161, 162, 254.
b, 1, 9.
bajo, 69.
be (to), 73, 100 (note), 172 (*b*).
bueno, 66, 69.
by, 163, *see* prepositions.
c, 1; pronounced, 10, 33.

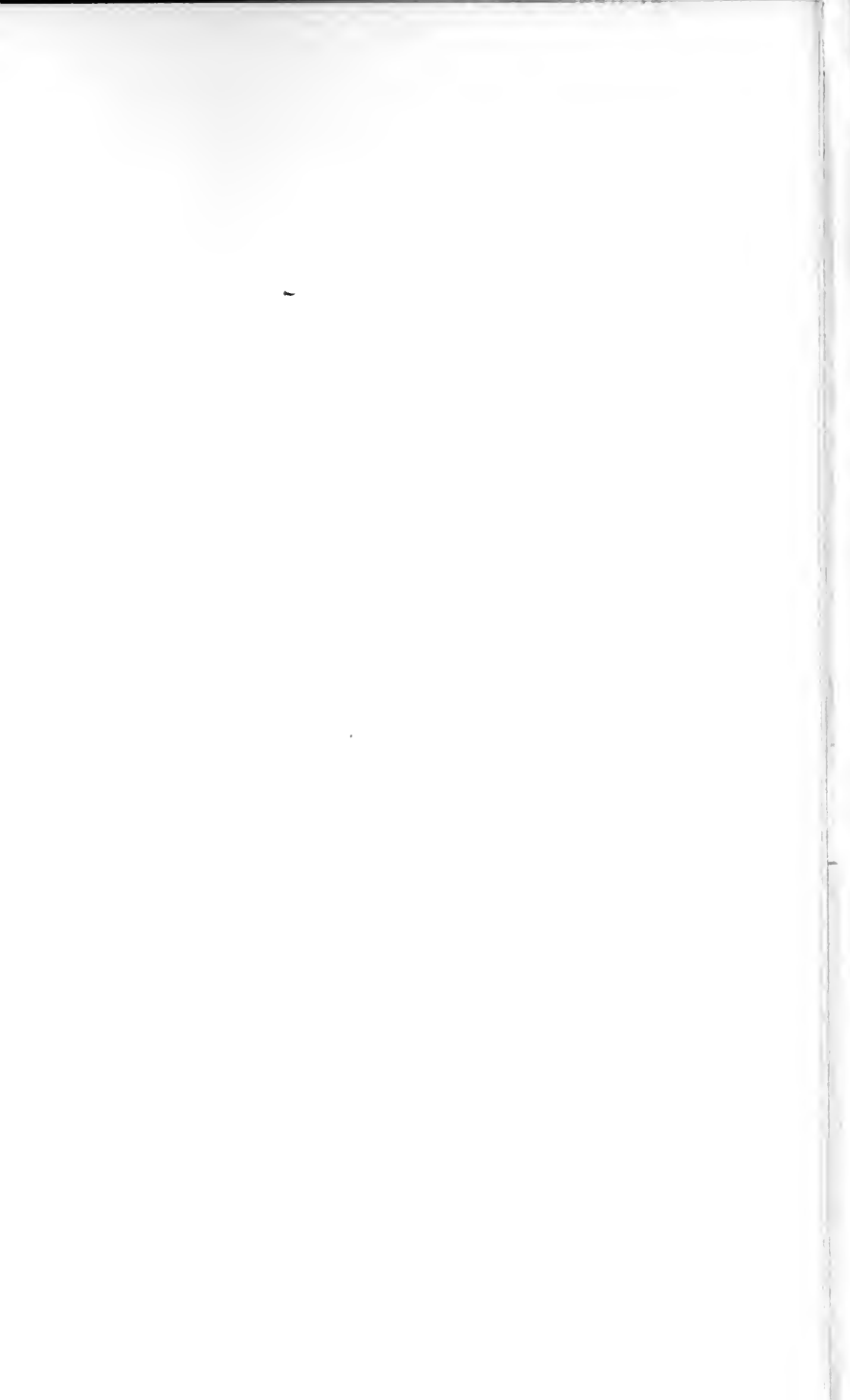
- caber**, 193.
cada, 120, 124.
caer, 187.
 capital letters, 3.
 cardinals, Les. VI.
 case, 40, page 10 (note 2).
ch, name, 1; pronounced, 11;
 in verbs, 152.
coer, 189.
cold, 172.
comer, Les. VIII, 103; like
 temer, 145, 146.
 comparative degree, 68.
 comparison of adjectives, Les.
 V.
 comparison of adverbs, 257.
 compound tenses, Les. XV,
 154, 155, Les. XXV.
con, 252 (*d*).
 conditional mood, 239.
conducir, 205.
 conjugation, (first) Les. XII,
 (second and third) Les.
 XIII.
 conjunctions; 239 (*a*) (*b*) (*c*),
 241, 243 (*b*), (taking sub.
 mood) 244, Les. XXXV.
 consonants, 9-32, 4 (*c*), 33;
 double, 33.
constar, 184 (*b*).
could, 239 (*h*).
cual (*cuál*), 111, 114, 117.
cualquiera, 66, 120, 125.
cuanto, 120, 126, 255 (*e*).
cuyo, 111, 115; *cúyo*, 117.
d, 1; pronounced, 12.
dar, 182.
de, 75, page 30 (note 1), 93
 (*a*), 100, 101, 163, 172 (*d*);
 with infinitive, Les. XXX,
 263.
deber (*deber de*), 155 (*a*).
decir, 206, 242 (*g*).
 defective verbs, second con-
 jugation, Les. XX; third
 conjugation, Les. XXII;
 list of, pp. 113, etc.
del, 45.
 demonstrative adjectives, Les.
 IX.
 demonstrative pronouns, Les.
 IX.
 diæresis, 4 (*e*), 37 (*c*).
did, *see do*, also 231 (*f*).
 diminutives, 62.
 diphthongs, 7.
do, 49, 227, 228.
don, 58 (note 3).
donde, 116.
dormir, 212.
e, 1; pronounced, 5.
el, 46.
el que, 111.
en, page 30 (note 3), 252 (*e*),
 264.
erguir, 213.
errar, 184 (*a*).
esa, 105 (*a*), 110 (*b*).
ese, 104, 105 (*a*).
eso, 108.
esta, 105 (*a*), 110 (*b*).
estar, Les. IV, 67, Les. V, 73,
 Les. XVI, 162, 166, 167,
 254 (*b*).
este, 104, 105 (*a*).
esto, 105 (*a*), 108, 110.

- euphonic changes in regular verbs, Les. XIV.
- exclamation sign of, 39(a), 117 (note), 258 (c).
- f, 1; pronounced, 13.
- fulano, 120, 127.
- future perfect tense, 237.
- future subjunctive, 246.
- future tense, 233; compound, 237.
- g, 1; pronounced, 14.
- gender, 2, Les. I, Les. II, 41, 50-54.
- gerund, 253 (note 1).
- grande, 66, 69.
- h, 1; pronounced, 15, 4 (d).
- haber, 78, Les. VI, Les. XV, 155 (a) (d), 156, 157, 158, 159, 254 (b).
- hablar, Les. XII, 141, 144.
- hacer, 190.
- hungry, 172.
- i, 1; pronounced, 5, 152, 153.
- imperative mood, Les. XXVI.
- imperfect tense, 231; compound, 235.
- impersonal expressions with subjunctive, 243 (e).
- impersonal verbs, Les. XXII.
- indefinite pronouns, Les. XI.
- inferior, 69.
- ínfimo, 69.
- infinitive mood, Les. XXIX, XXX.
- infinitive with prepositions, 251, 252.
- infinitive without prepositions, 250.
- instruir, 208.
- interjections, Les. XXXV, 243 (a).
- interrogation, sign of, 39 (a), 49.
- interrogative pronouns, Les. X, 241.
- interrogatively, verbs used, Les. XXIII, 224.
- ir, 214, 243 (e).
- irregular verbs, Les. XVIII-XXII.
- first conjugation, XVIII.
- second conjugation, XIX, XX.
- third conjugation, XXI, XXII.
- list of, pages 113-127.
- j, 1; pronounced, 16.
- jugar, 183.
- k, 1; pronounced, 17.
- l, 1; pronounced, 18, 33.
- let, 283 (c).
- letters, capital, 3; gender of, 2; list of, 1; remarks on, 4.
- ll, name, 1; pronounced, 19; in verbs, 152.
- lo, 70 (note 5), 82, 83, 91, 103.
- m, 1; pronounced, 20.
- malo, 66, 69.
- más, 68.

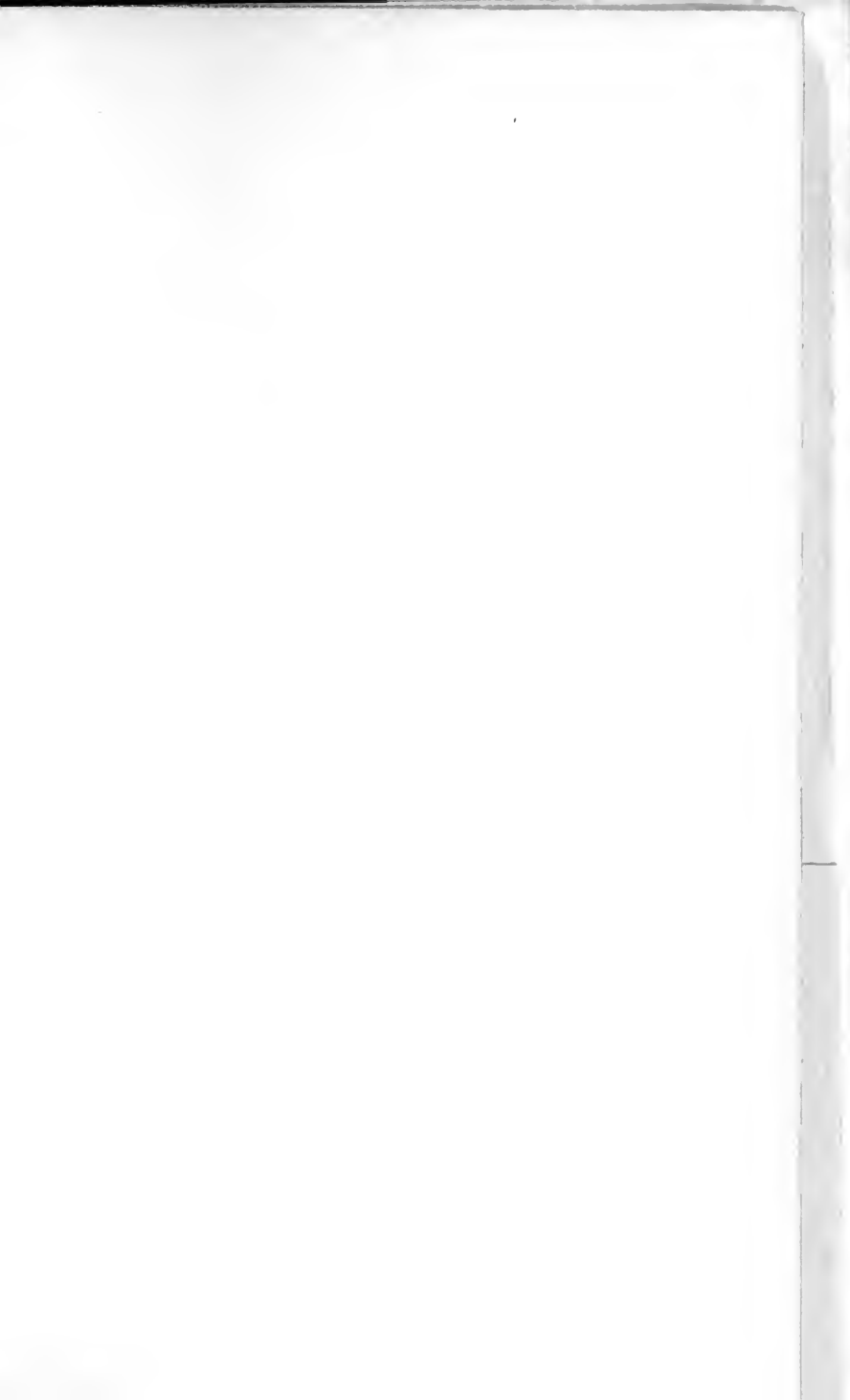
- matter with, 172 (e).
 máximo, 69.
 mayor, 69.
 mejor, 69.
 menor, 69.
 menos, 68.
 might, 239 (i), 142.
 mil, 75 (b) (c).
 mínimo, 69.
 mismo, 120, 128.
 month, days of, 77.
 morir, 214.
 mover, 186.
 mucho, 120, 129, 255 (e).
- n, 1; pronounced, 21, 33.
 ñ, name, 1; pronounced, 22; in
 verbs, 153.
 nada, 120 and note, 130, 255 (e).
 nadie, 120 and note, 131.
 namely, 110 (a).
 names, proper, 54, page 219;
 of countries, 59 (a), page 219.
 negation, 223, 256, 257 (d).
 negative, page 49 (note 1), 223
 (b) (c) (d) (e), 224 (b), 238 (b),
 257 (d), 258 (b).
 negatively, verbs used, Les.
 XXIII, 223.
 ninguno, 66.
 nouns, Les. II; as diminutive
 and augmentative, Les. III;
 with article, Les. III; com-
 pound, 52; personal, Les.
 II, note 2.
 number, Les. II, 42, 55, 56.
 numerals, Les. VI.
- oir, 216.
 oler, 194.
 óptimo, 69.
 ordinals, Les. VI.
 otro, 120, 132, 137 (note).
 own, 102.
- p, 1; pronounced, 23.
 para, 252 (f) (f'). 265.
 participle, past, 254, 160, 161.
 participle, present, 140, 253.
 passive voice, Les. XVI, 92,
 170, 254 (b).
 past anterior tense, 236.
 past participle, 160, 161, 254.
 pedir, 204.
 peor, 69.
 pequeño, 69.
 perfect tense, 234.
 pesar, 184 (b).
 pésimo, 69.
 placer, 195.
 pluperfect tense, 235.
 poco, 120, 133, 255 (e).
 poder, 196.
 poder, 217.
 poner, 197.
 por, 163, 252 (h), 266.
 possessive adjectives, Les.
 VIII, 94.
 possessive pronouns, Les. VIII.
 postrero, 66.
 prepositions, Les. XXIII,
 XXIV; with infinitive, Les.
 XXX, 254 (c); place of, 269;
 Eng. prepn. into Spanish,
 Les. XXXIV; in question,
 119 (a).
 present participle, 140, 253.
- o, 1; pronounced, 5.

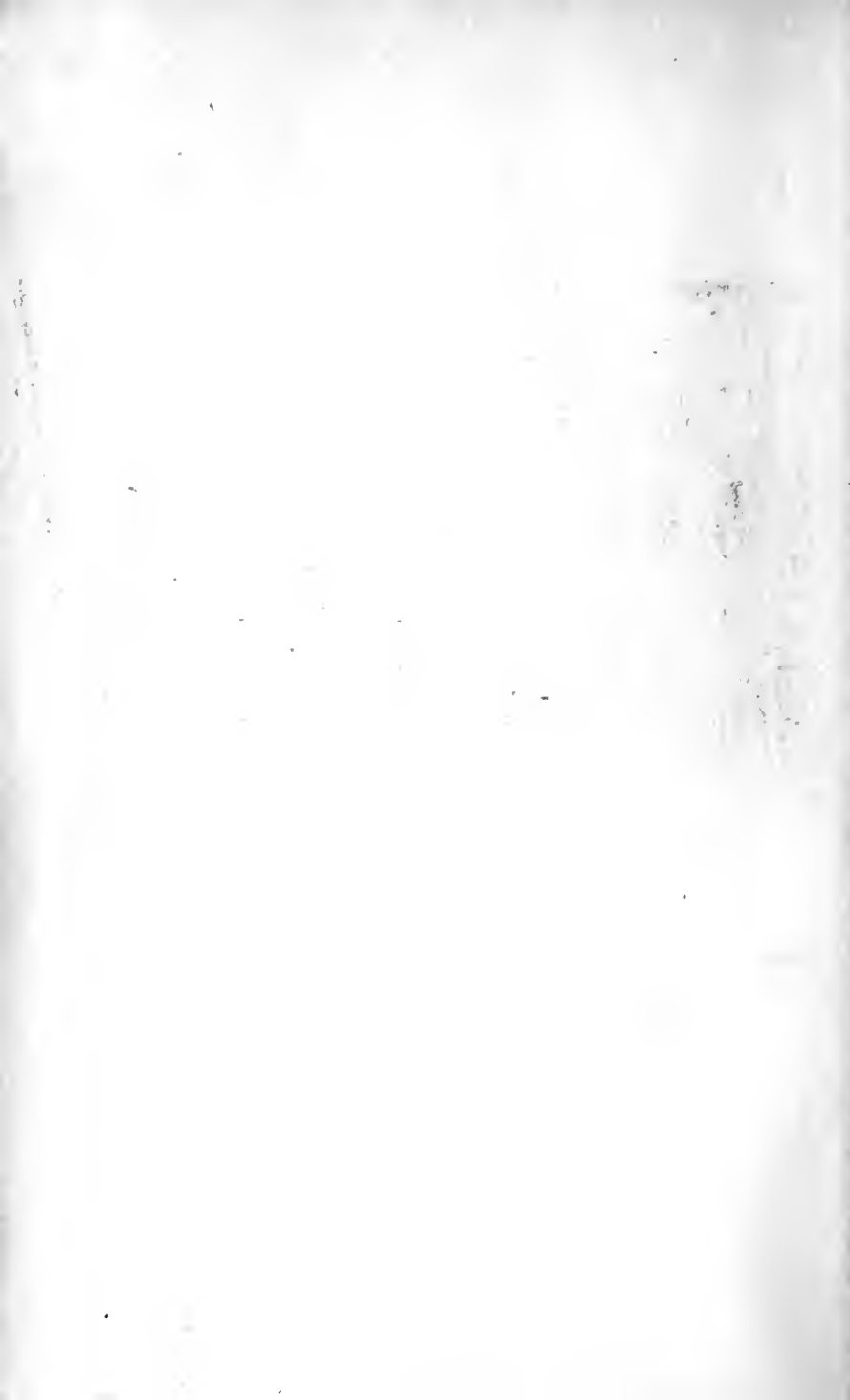
- present tense, 226-230; compound of, 234.
- preterite tense, 232; compound of, 236.
- primero, 66.
- pronominal adjectives, Les. XI, 255 (*d*), 274.
- pronouns, demonstrative, Les. IX; for the article, 94; indefinite, Les. XI; interrogative, Les. X; personal, Les. VII; possessive, Les. VIII; reflexive, 84, 92; relative, Les. X, 245; repeated, 88 (note).
- pronunciation, 1-37; rules for, 34-36.
- proper names, 54, page 219; of countries, 59(*a*), page 219.
- podrir, 217.
- punctuation, 39 (*a*) (*b*). 111 (note 1).
- q, 1; pronounced, 24.
- que, 75, 252 (*h*), 249 (*c*).
- que (qué), 111, 113, 117.
- querer, 192.
- quien (quién), 111, 113 (note), 117.
- quienquiera, 120, 134.
- r, 1; pronounced, 25, 33.
- recibir, Les. XIII, 110 (*c*), 147, 148.
- reflexive verbs, Les. XVII.
- regular verbs, Les. XII, XIII; euphonic changes in, Les. XIV.
- reir, 207.
- relative pronouns, Les. X, 245.
- rr, name, 1; pronounced, 25, 1; pronounced, 26.
- saber, 198, 242 (*b*).
- salir, 218.
- santo, 66 (*santa*, 66).
- satisfacer, 191.
- se, 84, 92, 170 (note 1).
- señor, senora, 58.
- sentir, etc., Les. XXI, 203.
- sequence of tenses, 247.
- ser, Les. I, 47, Les. II, 56, Les. III, 73, Les. XVI, 160, 164, 165, 254 (*b*).
- should, 142, 239 (*j*).
- si, 239 (*a*).
- some, 61.
- Spanish language (sketch of), pages 179-194.
- subjunctive, first and second imperfect distinguished, 243; in relative sentences, 245; used dependently, 241, etc., Les. XXVII, XXVIII; used independently, 240; with conjunctions, 244; with impersonal expressions, 243 (*e*).
- superior, 69.
- superlative, 71, 72, Exercise V (sentence 9, note).
- supremo, 69.
- syllables, division of, 38.
- t, 1; pronounced, 27.
- table of contents, pages v, vi.
- tal, 120, 135.
- temer, Les. XIII, 145, 146.
- tener, Les. III, 155 (*a*) (*b*), Les. XVII, 172, 174, 175, 254 (*b*).
- tenses, compound, Les. XV, XXV; sequence of, 247; simple, Les. XXIV, XXV.

- tercero, 66.
 than, 75 (a).
 tilde, 37 (b).
 time of day, 78.
 tocar, Les. XIV.
 todo, 65 (note 4), 120, 136.
 traer, 188.
 triphthongs, 8.
- u**, 1; pronounced, 5, 4 (c).
 una, 66, page 25 (note).
 uno, page 25 (note), 120, 137;
 see article, 66; *see* numerals,
 75 (d).
 usted (V.), 48, 81, 85 (note 3).
- v**, 1; pronounced, 28.
 valer, 199.
 varios, 120, 138.
 venir, 209.
 ver, 200.
 verbs, Les. XII-XXXI; alpha-
 betical list of irregular and
 defective, page 113-127; de-
 fective, second conjugation,
 Les. XX; defective, third
- conjugation, Les. XXII;
 ending in *car*, *gar*, *zar*, 149;
 ending in *cer*, *cir*, 150; end-
 ing in *ger*, *gir*, *guir*, 151;
 verb-forms, Les. XII; prin-
 cipal parts, 140, 141, 142,
 143. *See also* under tenses,
etc.
- vocabulary, English-Spanish,
 page 221; Spanish-English,
 page 195; Spanish proper
 names, page 219.
- vowels**, 3-6; long, 6; quality
 of, 6; short, 6; sounds, 4 (a).
- w**, 1; pronounced, 29.
- x**, 1; pronounced, 30.
- y**, 1; pronounced, 5, 31, 75 (e),
 153.
 yacer, 201.
 year, 77.
 you, 48.
- z**, 1; pronounced, 32.









Author Manning, Eugene W. est

Title A practical Spanish gr

DATE.	NA
Oct 16/22	Kannos
11.10.24	Michael,
7/12/32	Todd
July 7/38	R. A. son
Oct 7/44	E. C. 58

